CHAPTER

17

DETERMINANTS

17.1 INTRODUCTION

With the help of determinants, we can solve a system of simultaneous equations by Cramer's Rule. Determinants are also used in calculating inverse of a square matrix.

17.2 DETERMINANT AS ELIMINANT

Consider the following three equations having three unknowns, x, y and z.

$$a_1 x + b_1 y + c_1 z = 0 \quad \text{...(1)}$$

$$a_2 x + b_2 y + c_2 z = 0 \quad \text{...(2)}$$

$$a_3 x + b_3 y + c_3 z = 0 \quad \text{...(3)}$$

From (2) and (3) by cross-multiplication; we get

$$\frac{x}{b_2 c_3 - b_3 c_2} = \frac{y}{a_3 c_2 - a_2 c_3} = \frac{z}{a_2 b_3 - a_3 b_2} = k \text{ (say)}$$

$$x = (b_2 c_3 - b_3 c_2)\, k$$

$$y = (a_3 c_2 - a_2 c_3)\, k$$

and $$z = (a_2 b_3 - a_3 b_2)\, k$$

Substituting the values of x, y and z in (1), we get the eliminant

$$a_1 (b_2c_3 - b_3c_2)\, k + b_1 (a_3c_2 - a_2c_3)\, k + c_1 (a_2b_3 - a_3b_2)\, k = 0$$

or $$a_1 (b_2c_3 - b_3c_2) - b_1 (a_2c_3 - a_3c_2) + c_1 (a_2b_3 - a_3b_2) = 0 \quad \text{...(4)}$$

From (1), (2) and (3) by suppressing x, y, z the remaining can be written in the determinant as

$$\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} = 0 \quad \text{...(5)}$$

This is the determinant of third order.

As (4) and (5) both are the eliminant of the same equations.

$$\therefore \quad \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} = a_1 (b_2c_3 - b_3c_2) - b_1 (a_2c_3 - a_3c_2) + c_1 (a_2b_3 - a_3b_2) = 0$$

or $$\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} = a_1 \begin{vmatrix} b_2 & c_2 \\ b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} - b_1 \begin{vmatrix} a_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} + c_1 \begin{vmatrix} a_2 & b_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 \end{vmatrix}$$

17.3. MINOR

The minor of an element is defined as a determinant obtained by deleting the row and column containing the element.

Thus the minors of a_1, b_1 and c_1 are respectively.

$$\begin{vmatrix} b_2 & c_2 \\ b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}, \begin{vmatrix} a_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} \text{ and } \begin{vmatrix} a_2 & b_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 \end{vmatrix}$$

Thus $\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} = a_1$ (minor of a_1) $- b_1$ (minor of b_1) $+ c_1$ (minor of c_1).

17.4. COFACTOR

Cofactor = $(-1)^{r+c}$ Minor

where r is the number of rows of the element and c is the number of columns of the element.

The cofactor of any element of ith row and jth column is

$(-1)^{i+j}$ minor

Thus the cofactor of $a_1 = (-1)^{1+1}(b_2c_3 - b_3c_2) = +(b_2c_3 - b_3c_2)$

The cofactor of $b_1 = (-1)^{1+2}(a_2c_3 - a_3c_2) = -(a_2c_3 - a_3c_2)$

The cofactor of $c_1 = (-1)^{1+3}(a_2b_3 - a_3b_2) = +(a_2b_3 - a_3b_2)$

The determinant $= a_1$ (cofactor of a_1) $+ a_2$ (cofactor of a_2) $+ a_3$ (cofactor of a_3).

Example 1. *Write down the minors and co-factors of each element and also evaluate the determinant:*

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 4 & -5 & 6 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. M_{11} = Minor of element (1) $= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 4 & -5 & 6 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix}$

By eleminating the row and column of (1), the remaining is minor of (1)

$$= \begin{vmatrix} -5 & 6 \\ 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = (-5) \times 2 - (6 \times 5) = -10 - 30 = -40$$

Cofactor of element (1) $= A_{11} = (-1)^{1+1} M_{11} = (-1)^2 (-40) = -40$

M_{12} = Minor of element (3)

By eleminating the row and column of (3), we get

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 4 & -5 & 6 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 4 & 6 \\ 3 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = (4 \times 2) - (3 \times 6) = 8 - 18 = -10$$

$\Rightarrow$ Cofactor of element (–2) $= A_{12} = (-1)^{1+2}(-10) = 10$

M_{13} = Minor of element (– 2)

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 4 & -5 & 6 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 4 & -5 \\ 3 & 5 \end{vmatrix} = (4 \times 5) - (-5) \times 3 = 20 + 15 = 35$$

$\Rightarrow$ Cofactor of element $(-2) = A_{13} = (-1)^{1+3} M_{13} = (-1)^4\, 35 = 35$

M_{21} = Minor of element (4)

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 4 & -5 & 6 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 3 & -2 \\ 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = (3\times 2)-(-2)\times 5 = 6+10 = 16$$

$\Rightarrow$ Cofactor of element $(4) = A_{21} = (-1)^{2+1} M_{21} = (-1)^{2+1}(16) = -16$

M_{22} = Minor of element (-5)

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 4 & -5 & 6 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & -2 \\ 3 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = (1\times 2)-(-2)\times 3 = 2+6 = 8$$

$\Rightarrow$ Cofactor of element $(-5) = A_{22} = (-1)^{2+2} M_{22} = (-1)^{2+2}(8) = 8$

M_{23} = Minor of element (6)

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 4 & -5 & 6 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 \\ 3 & 5 \end{vmatrix} = (1\times 5)-3\times 3 = 5-9 = -4$$

$\Rightarrow$ Cofactor of element $(6) = A_{23} = (-1)^{2+3} M_{23} = (-1)^{2+3}(-4) = 4$

M_{31} = Minor of element (3)

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 4 & -5 & 6 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 3 & -2 \\ -5 & 6 \end{vmatrix} = (3\times 6)-(-2)\times(-5) = 18-10 = 8$$

$\Rightarrow$ Cofactor of element $(3) = A_{31} = (-1)^{3+1} M_{31} = (-1)^{3+1}\, 8 = 8$

M_{32} = Minor of element (5)

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 4 & -5 & 6 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & -2 \\ 4 & 6 \end{vmatrix} = (1\times 6)-(-2)\times 4 = 6+8 = 14$$

$\Rightarrow$ Cofactor of element $(5) = A_{32} = (-1)^{3+2} M_{32} = (-1)^{3+2}\, 14 = -14$

M_{33} = Minor of element (2)

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 4 & -5 & 6 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 \\ 4 & -5 \end{vmatrix} = 1\times(-5)-(4\times 3) = -5-12 = -17$$

Cofactor of element $(2) = A_{33} = (-1)^{3+3} M_{33} = (-1)^{3+3}(-17) = -17.$

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 4 & -5 & 6 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = 1 \times (\text{cofactor of } 1) + 3 \times (\text{cofactor of } 3) + (-2) \times [\text{cofactor of } (-2)].$$

$= 1 \times (-40) + 3 \times (10) + (-2) \times (35) = -40 + 30 - 70 = -80$ **Ans.**

Example 2. *Evaluate the determinants* :

$$\begin{vmatrix} 3 & -1 & -2 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 \\ 3 & -5 & 0 \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. We have, two zero entries in the second row. So, expanding along 2nd row:

$$\begin{vmatrix} 3 & -1 & -2 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 \\ 3 & -5 & 0 \end{vmatrix} = -0\begin{vmatrix} -1 & -2 \\ -5 & 0 \end{vmatrix} + 0\begin{vmatrix} 3 & -2 \\ 3 & 0 \end{vmatrix} - (-1)\begin{vmatrix} 3 & -1 \\ 3 & -5 \end{vmatrix}$$

$= -0 + 0 + 1\,(-15 + 3) = -12$ **Ans.**

Example 3. *Prove that the determinant* $\begin{vmatrix} x & \sin\theta & \cos\theta \\ -\sin\theta & -x & 1 \\ \cos\theta & 1 & x \end{vmatrix}$ *is independent of* θ.

Solution. We have,

$$\begin{vmatrix} x & \sin\theta & \cos\theta \\ -\sin\theta & -x & 1 \\ \cos\theta & 1 & x \end{vmatrix} = x\begin{vmatrix} -x & 1 \\ 1 & x \end{vmatrix} - \sin\theta\begin{vmatrix} -\sin\theta & 1 \\ \cos\theta & x \end{vmatrix} + \cos\theta\begin{vmatrix} -\sin\theta & -x \\ \cos\theta & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= x(-x^2-1) - \sin\theta\,(-x\sin\theta - \cos\theta) + \cos\theta\,(-\sin\theta + x\cos\theta)$$

$$= -x^3 - x + x\sin^2\theta + \sin\theta\cos\theta - \sin\theta\cos\theta + x\cos^2\theta$$

$$= -x^3 - x + x\,(\sin^2\theta + \cos^2\theta) = -x^3 - x + x$$

Thus, the determinant is independent of θ. **Proved.**

Example 4. *Evaluate the determinant* $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 4 \\ 3 & 5 & -1 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 \end{vmatrix}$.

(*i*) *With the help of second row,* (*ii*) *with the help of third column.*

Solution.

(*i*) $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 4 \\ 3 & 5 & -1 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 \end{vmatrix}$ = 3 × (cofactor of 3) + 5 × (cofactor of 5) + (– 1) (cofactor of – 1).

$$= 3 \times (-1)^{2+1}\begin{vmatrix} 0 & 4 \\ 1 & 2 \end{vmatrix} + 5 \times (-1)^{2+2}\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 4 \\ 0 & 2 \end{vmatrix} + (-1) \times (-1)^{2+3}\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= -3 \times (0-4) + 5\,(2-0) + (1-0) = 12 + 10 + 1 = 23$$ **Ans.**

(*ii*) $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 4 \\ 3 & 5 & -1 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 \end{vmatrix}$ = 4 × (cofactor of 4) + (– 1) (cofactor of (– 1)) + 2 × (cofactor of 2)

$$= 4 \times (-1)^{1+3}\begin{vmatrix} 3 & 5 \\ 0 & 1 \end{vmatrix} + (-1)(-1)^{2+3}\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{vmatrix} + 2 \times (-1)^{3+3}\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 3 & 5 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= 4 \times (3-0) + (1-0) + 2\,(5-0) = 12 + 1 + 10 = 23$$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 17.1

Write the minors and co-factors of each element of the following determinants and also evaluate the determinant in each case :

1. $\begin{vmatrix} 42 & 1 & 6 \\ 28 & 7 & 4 \\ 14 & 3 & 2 \end{vmatrix}$

Ans. $M_{11} = 2$, $M_{12} = 0$, $M_{13} = -14$, $M_{21} = -16$, $M_{22} = 0$
$M_{23} = 112$, $M_{31} = -38$, $M_{32} = 0$, $M_{33} = 266$
$A_{11} = 2$, $A_{12} = 0$, $A_{13} = -14$, $A_{21} = 16$, $A_{22} = 0$
$A_{23} = -112$, $A_{31} = -38$, $A_{32} = 0$, $A_{33} = 266$ $|A| = 0$

2. $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & bc \\ 1 & b & ca \\ 1 & c & ab \end{vmatrix}$

Ans. $M_{11} = (ab^2 - ac^2)$, $M_{12} = (ab - ac)$, $M_{13} = (c - b)$, $M_{21} = a^2b - bc^2$

$M_{22} = (ab - bc)$, $M_{23} = (c - a)$, $M_{31} = (ca^2 - cb^2)$, $M_{32} = ca - bc$, $M_{33} = (b - a)$,
$A_{11} = (ab^2 - ac^2)$, $A_{12} = (ac - ab)$, $A_{13} = (c - b)$, $A_{21} = bc^2 - a^2b$
$A_{22} = (ab - bc)$, $A_{23} = (a - c)$, $A_{31} = (ca^2 - cb^2)$, $A_{32} = (bc - ca)$, $A_{33} = (b - a)$
$|A| = (a - b)(b - c)(c - a)$.

Expand the following determinants :

3. $\begin{vmatrix} 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 5 & 1 & -6 \\ -7 & 8 & -9 \end{vmatrix}$ **Ans.** $|A| = 5$ **4.** $\begin{vmatrix} 5 & 0 & 7 \\ 8 & -6 & -4 \\ 2 & 3 & 9 \end{vmatrix}$ **Ans.** $|A| = 42$

5. $\begin{vmatrix} a & h & g \\ h & b & f \\ g & f & c \end{vmatrix}$ **Ans.** $|A| = abc + 2fgh - af^2 - bg^2 - ch^2$

Expand the following determinants by two methods :

(*i*) along the-third row. (*ii*) along the-third column.

6. $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & -3 & 2 \\ 4 & -1 & 2 \\ 3 & 5 & 2 \end{vmatrix}$ **Ans.** $|A| = 40$ **7.** $\begin{vmatrix} 3 & -2 & 4 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 \end{vmatrix}$ **Ans.** $|A| = -7$

8. $\begin{vmatrix} 2 & 3 & -2 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ -2 & 1 & -3 \end{vmatrix}$ **Ans.** $|A| = -37$

17.5. PROPERTIES OF DETERMINANTS

Property (*i*). *The value of a determinant remains unaltered; if the rows are interchanged into columns (or the columns into rows).*

Verification. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & a_2 & a_3 \\ b_1 & b_2 & b_3 \\ c_1 & c_2 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$

Expanding along first row, we get

$$\Delta = a_1 \begin{vmatrix} b_2 & b_3 \\ c_2 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} - a_2 \begin{vmatrix} b_1 & b_3 \\ c_1 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} + a_3 \begin{vmatrix} b_1 & b_2 \\ c_1 & c_2 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= a_1(b_2c_3 - b_3c_2) - a_2(b_1c_3 - b_3c_1) + a_3(b_1c_2 - b_2c_1) \qquad ...(1)$$

By interchanging the rows and columns of Δ, we get the determinant

$$\Delta_1 = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= a_1(b_2c_3 - b_3c_2) - b_1(a_2c_3 - a_3c_2) + c_1(a_2b_3 - a_3b_2)$$
$$= a_1b_2c_3 - a_1b_3c_2 - a_2b_1c_3 + a_3b_1c_2 + a_2b_3c_1 - a_3b_2c_1$$
$$= (a_1b_2c_3 - a_1b_3c_2) - (a_2b_1c_3 - a_2b_3c_1) + (a_3b_1c_2 - a_3b_2c_1)$$
$$= a_1(b_2c_3 - b_3c_2) - a_2(b_1c_3 - b_3c_1) + a_3(b_1c_2 - b_2c_1) \qquad ...(2)$$

From (1) and (2), we have

$$\Delta = \Delta_1.$$

It follows: The value of determinant remains unaltered, if the rows are interchanged into columns (or the columns into rows). **Proved.**

Property (*ii*). *If two rows (or two columns) of a determinant are interchanged, the sign of the value of the determinant changes.*

Verification. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & a_2 & a_3 \\ b_1 & b_2 & b_3 \\ c_1 & c_2 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$

$$= a_1 (b_2 c_3 - b_3 c_2) - a_2 (b_1 c_3 - b_3 c_1) + a_3 (b_1 c_2 - b_2 c_1) \qquad \ldots (1)$$

Interchanging first and third rows, the new determinant obtained is given by

$$\Delta_1 = \begin{vmatrix} c_1 & c_2 & c_3 \\ b_1 & b_2 & b_3 \\ a_1 & a_2 & a_3 \end{vmatrix}$$

Expanding along third row, we get

$$\Delta_1 = a_1 (c_2 b_3 - b_2 c_3) - a_2 (c_1 b_3 - c_3 b_1) + a_3 (b_2 c_1 - b_1 c_2)$$

$$= -[a_1 (b_2 c_3 - b_3 c_2) - a_2 (b_1 c_3 - b_3 c_1) + a_3 (b_1 c_2 - b_2 c_1)] \qquad \ldots (2)$$

From (1) and (2), we have

$$\Delta_1 = -\Delta$$

Hence, property (ii) is verified. **Proved.**

Example 5. *Verify property (ii) for* $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 4 & 0 & 6 \\ 7 & 8 & 9 \end{vmatrix}$

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 4 & 0 & 6 \\ 7 & 8 & 9 \end{vmatrix} = 1(0-48) - 2(36-42) + 3(32-0)$

$$= -48 + 12 + 96 = 60$$

Interchanging second the third rows, we have

$$\Delta_1 = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 7 & 8 & 9 \\ 4 & 0 & 6 \end{vmatrix} = 1(48-0) - 2(42-36) + 3(0-32)$$

$$= 48 - 12 - 96 = -60$$

Thus, $\Delta_1 = \Delta$

Hence property (*ii*) is verified. **Verified.**

Property (*iii*). *If two rows (or columns) of a determinant are identical, the value of the determinant is zero.*

Verification. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$, so that the first two rows are identical.

By interchanging the first two rows, we get the same determinant D.

By property (*ii*), on interchanging the rows, the sign of the determinant changes.

or $\Delta = -\Delta$ or $2\Delta = 0$ or $\Delta = 0$ **Proved.**

Example 6. *Evaluate* : $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 1 & 5 & 6 \end{vmatrix}$

Solution. Expanding along first row, we have

$$\Delta = 2(18-20) - 3(12-4) + 4(10-3)$$

$$= 2 \times (-2) - 3(8) + 4(7) = -4 - 24 + 28 = 0$$

Here, R_1 and R_2 are identical. **Verified.**

Property (*iv*). *If the elements of any row (or column) of a determinant be each multiplied by the same number, the determinant is multiplied by that number.*

Verification. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$

and Δ_1 be the determinant obtained by multiplying the elements of the first row by k. Then

$$\Delta_1 = \begin{vmatrix} ka_1 & kb_1 & kc_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= ka_1 (b_2c_3 - b_3c_2) - kb_1 (a_2c_3 - a_3c_2) + kc_1 (a_2b_3 - a_3b_2)$$

$$= k [a_1 (b_2c_3 - b_3c_2) - b_1 (a_2c_3 - a_3c_2) + c_1 (a_2b_3 - a_3b_2)]$$

$$= k \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} = k\,\Delta.$$

Hence, $\begin{vmatrix} ka_1 & kb_1 & kc_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} = k \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$ **Proved.**

Example 7. *Verify the property (iv) by*

$$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 2 & 5 & 8 \\ 3 & 7 & 1 \\ 2 & 0 & 2 \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 2 & 5 & 8 \\ 3 & 7 & 1 \\ 2 & 0 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = 2\,(14-0) - 5\,(6-2) + 8\,(0-14) = 28 - 20 - 112 = -104$

Multiplying the first column by 5, we get

$$\Delta_1 = \begin{vmatrix} 10 & 5 & 8 \\ 15 & 7 & 1 \\ 10 & 0 & 2 \end{vmatrix} = 10\,(14-0) - 5\,(30-10) + 8\,(0-70)$$

$$= 140 - 100 - 560 = -520 = 5\,(-104)$$

$$\Delta_1 = 5\,\Delta$$

Property (*iv*) is verified. **Verified.**

Property (*v*). *The value of the determinant remains unaltered if to the elements of one row (or column) be added any constant multiple of the corresponding elements of any other row (or column) respectively.*

Verification. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$

On multiplying the second column by l and the third column by m and adding to the first column, we get

$$\Delta' = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 + lb_1 + mc_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 + lb_2 + mc_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 + lb_3 + mc_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} + l \begin{vmatrix} b_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ b_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ b_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} + m \begin{vmatrix} c_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ c_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ c_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$$

$= \Delta + 0 + 0$ (Since columns are identical)

$= \Delta$ **Proved.**

Example 8. *Verify the property (v) by*

$$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 2 & 4 \\ 3 & 2 & 5 \\ 0 & 4 & 6 \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 2 & 4 \\ 3 & 2 & 5 \\ 0 & 4 & 6 \end{vmatrix} = 1\,(12-20) - 2\,(18-0) + 4\,(12-0) = -8 - 36 + 48 = 4$

On multiplying the second column by 5 and third column by 6 and adding to the first column, we get

$$\Delta_1 = \begin{vmatrix} 1+10+24 & 2 & 4 \\ 3+10+30 & 2 & 5 \\ 0+20+36 & 4 & 6 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 35 & 2 & 4 \\ 43 & 2 & 5 \\ 56 & 4 & 6 \end{vmatrix} = 35\,(12-20) - 2\,(258-280) + 4\,(172-112)$$

$$= 35\,(-8) - 2\,(-22) + 4\,(60) = -280 + 44 + 240 = 284 - 280 = 4$$

$\Delta_1 = \Delta$ **Verified.**

Example 9. *Show that*

$$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} b-c & c-a & a-b \\ c-a & a-b & b-c \\ a-b & b-c & c-a \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} b-c & c-a & a-b \\ c-a & a-b & b-c \\ a-b & b-c & c-a \end{vmatrix}$

Applying $C_1 \to C_1 + C_2 + C_3$, we get

$$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 0 & c-a & a-b \\ 0 & a-b & b-c \\ 0 & b-c & c-a \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

[$\because$ C_1 consists of all zeroes.]

Proved.

Example 10. *Without expanding, evaluate the determinant*

$$\begin{vmatrix} \sin\alpha & \cos\alpha & \sin(\alpha+\delta) \\ \sin\beta & \cos\beta & \sin(\beta+\delta) \\ \sin\gamma & \cos\gamma & \sin(\gamma+\delta) \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} \sin\alpha & \cos\alpha & \sin(\alpha+\delta) \\ \sin\beta & \cos\beta & \sin(\beta+\delta) \\ \sin\gamma & \cos\gamma & \sin(\gamma+\delta) \end{vmatrix}$

$\Rightarrow$ $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} \sin\alpha & \cos\alpha & \sin\alpha\cos\delta + \cos\alpha\sin\delta \\ \sin\beta & \cos\beta & \sin\beta\cos\delta + \cos\beta\sin\delta \\ \sin\gamma & \cos\gamma & \sin\gamma\cos\delta + \cos\gamma\sin\delta \end{vmatrix}$

$$[\because \sin(A+B) = \sin A\cos B + \cos A\sin B]$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \Delta = \begin{vmatrix} \sin\alpha & \cos\alpha & 0 \\ \sin\beta & \cos\beta & 0 \\ \sin\gamma & \cos\gamma & 0 \end{vmatrix} \quad [\text{Applying } C_3 \to C_3 - \cos\delta.C_1 - \sin\delta.C_2]$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \Delta = 0 \quad [\because C_3 \text{ consists of all zeroes.}]$$ **Ans.**

Example 11. *By using property of determinants prove that :*

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & x & x^2 \\ x^2 & 1 & x \\ x & x^2 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = (1-x^3)^2$$

Solution. L.H.S. $= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & x & x^2 \\ x^2 & 1 & x \\ x & x^2 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 1+x+x^2 & x & x^2 \\ 1+x+x^2 & 1 & x \\ 1+x+x^2 & x^2 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$ [Applying $C_1 \to C_1 + C_2 + C_3$]

$$= (1+x+x^2)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & x & x^2 \\ 1 & 1 & x \\ 1 & x^2 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= (1+x+x^2)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & x & x^2 \\ 0 & 1-x & x-x^2 \\ 0 & x^2-x & 1-x^2 \end{vmatrix} \quad [\text{Applying } R_2 \to R_2 - R_1 \text{ and } R_3 \to R_3 - R_1]$$

$$= (1+x+x^2)(1)\{(1-x)(1-x^2) - (x^2-x)(x-x^2)\}$$

$$= (1+x+x^2)(1-x)^2\{1+x+x^2\} = \{(1-x)(1+x+x^2)\}^2 = (1-x^3)^2 = \text{R.H.S.}$$

Proved.

Example 12. *Using properties of determinants, prove that*

$$\begin{vmatrix} x & y & z \\ x^2 & y^2 & z^2 \\ x^3 & y^3 & z^3 \end{vmatrix} = xyz(x-y)(y-z)(z-x).$$

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} x & y & z \\ x^2 & y^2 & z^2 \\ x^3 & y^3 & z^3 \end{vmatrix} = xyz\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ x & y & z \\ x^2 & y^2 & z^2 \end{vmatrix}$

Operate : $C_1 \to C_1 - C_2$; $C_2 \to C_2 - C_3$.

$$\Delta = xyz\begin{vmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ x-y & y-z & z \\ x^2-y^2 & y^2-z^2 & z^2 \end{vmatrix} = xyz\begin{vmatrix} x-y & y-z \\ x^2-y^2 & y^2-z^2 \end{vmatrix} \quad (\text{On expanding by } R_1)$$

$$= xyz(x-y)(y-z)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ x+y & y+z \end{vmatrix} = xyz(x-y)(y-z)(z-x).$$ **Proved.**

Example 13. *Using the properties of determinants, show that*

$$\begin{vmatrix} a+x & y & z \\ x & a+y & z \\ x & y & a+z \end{vmatrix} = a^2(a+x+y+z).$$

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} a+x & y & z \\ x & a+y & z \\ x & y & a+z \end{vmatrix}$

Operate : $C_1 \to C_1 + C_2 + C_3$

$$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} a+x+y+z & y & z \\ a+x+y+z & a+y & z \\ a+x+y+z & y & a+z \end{vmatrix}$$

Taking $(a + x + y + z)$ common from Ist column, we get

$$= (a+x+y+z)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & y & z \\ 1 & a+y & z \\ 1 & y & a+z \end{vmatrix}$$

Operate : $R_2 \to R_2 - R_1, R_3 \to R_3 - R_1$

$$= (a+x+y+z)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & y & z \\ 0 & a & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & a \end{vmatrix} = (a+x+y+z)\times 1\begin{vmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & a \end{vmatrix} \qquad \text{[Expanding along } C_1]$$

$= (a + x + y + z)\, a^2 = a^2(a + x + y + z)$ **Proved.**

Example 14. *If w is the one of the imaginary cube roots of unity, find the value of the determinant:*

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & \omega & \omega^2 \\ \omega & \omega^2 & 1 \\ \omega^2 & 1 & \omega \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. The given determinant $= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & \omega & \omega^2 \\ \omega & \omega^2 & 1 \\ \omega^2 & 1 & \omega \end{vmatrix}$

By $R_1 \to R_1 + R_2 + R_3$, we get

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 1+\omega+\omega^2 & 1+\omega+\omega^2 & 1+\omega+\omega^2 \\ \omega & \omega^2 & 1 \\ \omega^2 & 1 & \omega \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ \omega & \omega^2 & 1 \\ \omega^2 & 1 & \omega \end{vmatrix} \qquad [\because\ 1 + \omega + \omega^2 = 0]$$

$= 0$ (Since each entry in R_1 is zero.) **Ans.**

Example 15. *Without expanding the determinant, show that (a + b + c) is a factor of the determinant* $\begin{vmatrix} a & b & c \\ b & c & a \\ c & a & b \end{vmatrix}$.

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} a & b & c \\ b & c & a \\ c & a & b \end{vmatrix}$ Operate : $C_1 \to C_1 + C_2 + C_3$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad \Delta = \begin{vmatrix} a+b+c & b & c \\ a+b+c & c & a \\ a+b+c & a & b \end{vmatrix} = (a+b+c)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & b & c \\ 1 & c & a \\ 1 & a & b \end{vmatrix}$$

$\Rightarrow$ $(a + b + c)$ is a factor of Δ. **Proved.**

Example 16. *Without expanding the determinant, prove that* $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & b+c \\ 1 & b & c+a \\ 1 & c & a+b \end{vmatrix} = 0.$

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & b+c \\ 1 & b & c+a \\ 1 & c & a+b \end{vmatrix}$

Operate : $C_3 \to C_3 + C_2$.

$$\therefore \qquad \Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & a+b+c \\ 1 & b & a+b+c \\ 1 & c & a+b+c \end{vmatrix} = (a+b+c)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & 1 \\ 1 & b & 1 \\ 1 & c & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

$= 0$ ($\because$ C_1 and C_3 are identical). **Proved.**

Example 17. *Without expanding the determinant, prove that*

$$\begin{vmatrix} \frac{1}{a} & a^2 & bc \\ \frac{1}{b} & b^2 & ca \\ \frac{1}{c} & c^2 & ab \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} \frac{1}{a} & a^2 & bc \\ \frac{1}{b} & b^2 & ca \\ \frac{1}{c} & c^2 & ab \end{vmatrix}$

Multiply R_1 by a, R_2 by b and R_3 by c.

$$\Delta = \frac{1}{abc}\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a^3 & abc \\ 1 & b^3 & abc \\ 1 & c^3 & abc \end{vmatrix} = \frac{1}{abc}.abc\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a^3 & 1 \\ 1 & b^3 & 1 \\ 1 & c^3 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = 1 \times 0 = 0.$$

(Since C_1 and C_3 are identical) **Proved.**

Example 18. *Using properties of determinants, prove that :*

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & a^3 \\ 1 & b & b^3 \\ 1 & c & c^3 \end{vmatrix} = (a-b)(b-c)(c-a)(a+b+c)$$

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & a^3 \\ 1 & b & b^3 \\ 1 & c & c^3 \end{vmatrix}$

Operate : $R_1 \to R_1 - R_2$; $R_2 \to R_2 - R_3$

$$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 0 & a-b & a^3-b^3 \\ 0 & b-c & b^3-c^3 \\ 1 & c & c^3 \end{vmatrix} = 1.\begin{vmatrix} a-b & a^3-b^3 \\ b-c & b^3-c^3 \end{vmatrix} \qquad \text{(Expand along } C_1\text{)}$$

$$= (a-b)(b-c)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a^2+ab+b^2 \\ 1 & b^2+bc+c^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

Operate : $R_1 \to R_1 - R_2$

$$\Delta = (a-b)(b-c)\begin{vmatrix} 0 & (a^2-c^2)+(ab-bc) \\ 1 & b^2+bc+c^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= (a-b).(b-c).(-1)[(a^2-c^2)+b(a-c)]$$

$$= (a-b).(b-c)(c-a)(a+b+c).$$ **Proved.**

[**Note :** It can also be proved by factor Theorem easily]

Example 19. *Evaluate*

$$\begin{vmatrix} a-b-c & 2a & 2a \\ 2b & b-c-a & 2b \\ 2c & 2c & c-a-b \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. By $R_1 \to R_1 + R_2 + R_3$, we get

$$\begin{vmatrix} a+b+c & a+b+c & a+b+c \\ 2b & b-c-a & 2b \\ 2c & 2c & c-a-b \end{vmatrix} = (a+b+c)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 2b & b-c-a & 2b \\ 2c & 2c & c-a-b \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= (a+b+c)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 2b & -(a+b+c) & 0 \\ 2c & 0 & -(a+b+c) \end{vmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ C_2 - C_1 \\ C_3 - C_1 \end{matrix}$$

On expanding by first row $= (a+b+c)(a+b+c)^2 = (a+b+c)^3$. **Ans.**

Example 20. *By using properties of determinants prove that:*

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1+a^2-b^2 & 2ab & -2b \\ 2ab & 1-a^2+b^2 & 2a \\ 2b & -2a & 1-a^2-b^2 \end{vmatrix} = (1+a^2+b^2)^3$$

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 1+a^2-b^2 & 2ab & -2b \\ 2ab & 1-a^2+b^2 & 2a \\ 2b & -2a & 1-a^2-b^2 \end{vmatrix}$

Applying $C_1 \to C_1 - bC_3$, $\quad C_2 \to C_2 + a\,C_3$, we get

$$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 1+a^2+b^2 & 0 & -2b \\ 0 & 1+a^2+b^2 & 2a \\ b(1+a^2+b^2) & -a(1+a^2+b^2) & 1-a^2-b^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

Taking $(1 + a^2 + b^2)$ common from C_1 and C_2, we get

$$\Delta = (1+a^2+b^2)^2 \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & -2b \\ 0 & 1 & 2a \\ b & -a & 1-a^2-b^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

Applying $C_3 \to C_3 + 2b\, C_1$, we get

$$\Delta = (1+a^2+b^2)^2 \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 2a \\ b & -a & 1-a^2+b^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

Expanding along R_1, we get

$$\Delta = (1+a^2+b^2)^2 \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 2a \\ -a & 1-a^2+b^2 \end{vmatrix} = (1 + a^2 + b^2)^2 (1 - a^2 + b^2 + 2a^2)$$

$= (1 + a^2 + b^2)^3$ **Proved.**

Example 21. *Prove that*

$$\begin{vmatrix} \alpha & \beta & \gamma \\ \alpha^2 & \beta^2 & \gamma^2 \\ \beta+\gamma & \gamma+\alpha & \alpha+\beta \end{vmatrix} = (\alpha - \beta)(\beta - \gamma)(\gamma - \alpha)(\alpha + \beta + \gamma)$$

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} \alpha & \beta & \gamma \\ \alpha^2 & \beta^2 & \gamma^2 \\ \beta+\gamma & \gamma+\alpha & \alpha+\beta \end{vmatrix}$.

Applying $R_3 \to R_1 + R_3$, we get

$$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} \alpha & \beta & \gamma \\ \alpha^2 & \beta^2 & \gamma^2 \\ \alpha+\beta+\gamma & \alpha+\beta+\gamma & \alpha+\beta+\gamma \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= (\alpha + \beta + \gamma) \begin{vmatrix} \alpha & \beta & \gamma \\ \alpha^2 & \beta^2 & \gamma^2 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$ [Taking out $(\alpha + \beta + \gamma)$ common from R_3]

$$= (\alpha + \beta + \gamma) \begin{vmatrix} \alpha & \beta-\alpha & \gamma-\alpha \\ \alpha^2 & \beta^2-\alpha^2 & \gamma^2-\alpha^2 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{vmatrix}$$ Applying $C_2 \to C_2 - C_1$, $C_3 \to C_3 - C_1$

$$= (\alpha + \beta + \gamma)(\beta - \alpha)(\gamma - \alpha) \begin{vmatrix} \alpha & 1 & 1 \\ \alpha^2 & \beta+\alpha & \gamma+\alpha \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= (\alpha + \beta + \gamma)(\beta - \alpha)(\gamma - \alpha).1 \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ \beta+\alpha & \gamma+\alpha \end{vmatrix}$$ [Expanding along R_3]

$= (\alpha + \beta + \gamma)(\beta - \alpha)(\gamma - \alpha)(\gamma + \alpha - \beta - \alpha)$

$= (\alpha + \beta + \gamma)(\beta - \gamma)(\gamma - \alpha)(\alpha - \beta)$ **Proved.**

Example 22. *Prove that*

$$\begin{vmatrix} -a^2 & ab & ac \\ ba & -b^2 & bc \\ ac & bc & -c^2 \end{vmatrix} = 4\,a^2b^2c^2$$

Solution. Let $\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} -a^2 & ab & ac \\ ba & -b^2 & bc \\ ac & bc & -c^2 \end{vmatrix}$

Taking a, b, c common from C_1, C_2 and C_3 respectively, we get

$$\Delta = abc \begin{vmatrix} -a & a & a \\ b & -b & b \\ c & c & -c \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= a^2b^2c^2 \begin{vmatrix} -1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & -1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & -1 \end{vmatrix} \quad \text{[Taking } a, b, c \text{ common from } R_1, R_2 \text{ and } R_3 \text{ respectively]}$$

$$= a^2b^2c^2 \begin{vmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 \end{vmatrix} \quad \text{[Applying } C_2 \to C_2 + C_1,\ C_3 \to C_3 + C_1\text{]}$$

$$= a^2b^2c^2\,(-1) \begin{vmatrix} 0 & 2 \\ 2 & 0 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= a^2b^2c^2\,(-1)\,(0-4) = 4a^2\,b^2\,c^2 \quad \text{[Expanding along } R_1\text{]}$$ **Proved.**

Example 23. *Using properties of determinants, prove the following:*

$$\begin{vmatrix} a & b & c \\ a-b & b-c & c-a \\ b+c & c+a & a+b \end{vmatrix} = a^3+b^3+c^3-3abc.$$

Solution. We have,

$$\begin{vmatrix} a & b & c \\ a-b & b-c & c-a \\ b+c & c+a & a+b \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} a+b+c & b & c \\ a-b+b-c+c-a & b-c & c-a \\ b+c+c+a+a+b & c+a & a+b \end{vmatrix}$$

By applying $C_1 \to C_1 + C_2 + C_3$

$$= \begin{vmatrix} a+b+c & b & c \\ 0 & b-c & c-a \\ 2\,(a+b+c) & c+a & a+b \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} a+b+c & b & c \\ 0 & b-c & c-a \\ 0 & c+a-2b & a+b-2c \end{vmatrix} \quad \text{By } R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_1$$

Expanding along C_1, we get

$$= (a+b+c)\,\{(b-c)\,(a+b-2c) - (c-a)\,(c+a-2b)\}$$

$$= (a+b+c)\,\{(ab+b^2-2bc-ac-bc+2c^2) - (c^2+ac-2bc-ac-a^2+2ab)\}$$

$$= (a+b+c)\,\{ab+b^2-2bc-ac-bc+2c^2-c^2-ac+2bc+ac+a^2-2ab\}$$

$$= (a+b+c)\,(a^2+b^2+c^2-ab-bc-ca) = a^3+b^3+c^3-3abc$$ **Proved.**

Example 24. *If* $\begin{vmatrix} a & a^2 & a^3-1 \\ b & b^2 & b^3-1 \\ c & c^2 & c^3-1 \end{vmatrix} = 0$, *prove that* $abc = 1$.

Solution.

$$\begin{vmatrix} a & a^2 & a^3-1 \\ b & b^2 & b^3-1 \\ c & c^2 & c^3-1 \end{vmatrix} = 0 \Rightarrow \begin{vmatrix} a & a^2 & a^3 \\ b & b^2 & b^3 \\ c & c^2 & c^3 \end{vmatrix} + \begin{vmatrix} a & a^2 & -1 \\ b & b^2 & -1 \\ c & c^2 & -1 \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad abc \begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & a^2 \\ 1 & b & b^2 \\ 1 & c & c^2 \end{vmatrix} - \begin{vmatrix} a & a^2 & 1 \\ b & b^2 & 1 \\ c & c^2 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

(Taking out common a, b, c from R_1, R_2 and R_3 from 1st determinant)

$$\Rightarrow \quad abc \begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & a^2 \\ 1 & b & b^2 \\ 1 & c & c^2 \end{vmatrix} + \begin{vmatrix} a & 1 & a^2 \\ b & 1 & b^2 \\ c & 1 & c^2 \end{vmatrix} = 0 \quad \text{(Interchanging } C_2 \text{ and } C_3\text{)}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad abc \begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & a^2 \\ 1 & b & b^2 \\ 1 & c & c^2 \end{vmatrix} - \begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & a^2 \\ 1 & b & b^2 \\ 1 & c & c^2 \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

(Interchanging C_1 and C_2 of the second determinant)

$$\Rightarrow \quad (abc-1) \begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & a^2 \\ 1 & b & b^2 \\ 1 & c & c^2 \end{vmatrix} = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad abc - 1 = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad abc = 1$$

Proved.

Example 25. *Show that*

$$\begin{vmatrix} b+c & c+a & a+b \\ q+r & r+p & p+q \\ y+z & z+x & x+y \end{vmatrix} = 2 \begin{vmatrix} a & b & c \\ p & q & r \\ x & y & z \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. The above determinant can be expressed as the sum of 8 determinants as given below:

$$\begin{vmatrix} b+c & c+a & a+b \\ q+r & r+p & p+q \\ y+z & z+x & x+y \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} b & c & a \\ q & r & p \\ y & z & x \end{vmatrix} + \begin{vmatrix} b & a & a \\ q & p & p \\ y & x & x \end{vmatrix} + \begin{vmatrix} b & c & b \\ q & r & q \\ y & z & y \end{vmatrix} + \begin{vmatrix} b & a & b \\ q & p & q \\ y & x & y \end{vmatrix}$$

$$+ \begin{vmatrix} c & c & a \\ r & r & p \\ z & z & x \end{vmatrix} + \begin{vmatrix} c & a & a \\ r & p & p \\ z & x & x \end{vmatrix} + \begin{vmatrix} c & c & b \\ r & r & q \\ z & z & y \end{vmatrix} + \begin{vmatrix} c & a & b \\ r & p & q \\ z & x & y \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{vmatrix} b & c & a \\ q & r & p \\ y & z & x \end{vmatrix} + 0 + 0 + 0 + 0 + 0 + 0 + \begin{vmatrix} c & a & b \\ r & p & q \\ z & x & y \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= (-1)^2 \begin{vmatrix} a & b & c \\ p & q & r \\ x & y & z \end{vmatrix} + (-1)^2 \begin{vmatrix} a & b & c \\ p & q & r \\ x & y & z \end{vmatrix} = 2 \begin{vmatrix} a & b & c \\ p & q & r \\ x & y & z \end{vmatrix}$$

Proved.

Example 26. *If a, b, c are in A.P; then find the determinant:*

$$\begin{vmatrix} x+2 & x+3 & x+2a \\ x+3 & x+4 & x+2b \\ x+4 & x+5 & x+2c \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. Applying $R_1 \to R_1 + R_3 - 2R_2$ to the given determinant, we have

$$\begin{vmatrix} (x+2)+(x+4)-2\,(x+3) & (x+3)+(x+5)-2\,(x+4) & (x+2a)+(x+2c)-2\,(x+2b) \\ x+3 & x+4 & x+2b \\ x+4 & x+5 & x+2c \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 0 & 0 & 2a+2c-4b \\ x+3 & x+4 & x+2b \\ x+4 & x+5 & x+2c \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ x+3 & x+4 & x+2b \\ x+4 & x+5 & x+2c \end{vmatrix} = 0 \qquad \begin{bmatrix} \because & a, b, c \text{ are in A.P.} \\ \Rightarrow & 2b = a+c \\ \Rightarrow & 2a+2c = 4b \end{bmatrix}$$

[$\because$ R_1 consists of all zeroes.] **Ans.**

Example 27. *Prove that*

$$\begin{vmatrix} 2\alpha & \alpha+\beta & \alpha+\gamma \\ \beta+\alpha & 2\beta & \beta+\gamma \\ \gamma+\alpha & \gamma+\beta & 2\gamma \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

Solution. Given determinant $= \begin{vmatrix} \alpha+\alpha & \alpha+\beta & \alpha+\gamma \\ \beta+\alpha & \beta+\beta & \beta+\gamma \\ \gamma+\alpha & \gamma+\beta & \gamma+\gamma \end{vmatrix}$

The above determinant can be expressed as the sum of 8 determinants.
Each of the 8 determinants has either two identical columns or identical rows.
$\therefore$ Each of the resulting determinant is zero. Hence the result. **Proved.**

Example 28. *Using properties of determinants, prove that:*

$$\begin{vmatrix} 3a & -a+b & -a+c \\ -b+a & 3b & -b+c \\ -c+a & -c+b & 3c \end{vmatrix} = 3(a+b+c)\,(ab+bc+ca)$$

Solution.

$$\begin{vmatrix} 3a & -a+b & -a+c \\ -b+a & 3b & -b+c \\ -c+a & -c+b & 3c \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} a+b+c & -a+b & -a+c \\ a+b+c & 3b & -b+c \\ a+b+c & -c+b & 3c \end{vmatrix} \quad \text{(Applying } C_1 \to C_1 + C_2 + C_3\text{)}$$

$$= (a+b+c)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & -a+b & -a+c \\ 1 & 3b & -b+c \\ 1 & -c+b & 3c \end{vmatrix} = (a+b+c)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & -a+b & -a+c \\ 0 & a+2b & a-b \\ 0 & a-c & a+2c \end{vmatrix} \quad \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$= (a+b+c)\,.1.\{(a+2b)(a+2c) - (a-c)\,(a-b)\}$ [Expanding along C_1]
$= (a+b+c)\,\{(a^2 + 2ac + 2ab + 4bc) - (a^2 - ab - ac + bc)\}$
$= (a+b+c)\,(3ab + 3bc + 3ca) = 3\,(a+b+c)\,(ab+bc+ca)$ **Proved.**

Example 29. *Show that $x = -(a+b+c)$ is one root of the equation:*

$$\begin{vmatrix} x+a & b & c \\ b & x+c & a \\ c & a & x+b \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

and solve the equation completely.

Solution. By $C_1 \to C_1 + C_2 + C_3$, we get $\begin{vmatrix} x+a+b+c & b & c \\ x+a+b+c & x+c & a \\ x+a+b+c & a & x+b \end{vmatrix} = 0$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (x+a+b+c)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & b & c \\ 1 & x+c & a \\ 1 & a & x+b \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (x+a+b+c)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & b & c \\ 0 & x-b+c & a-c \\ 0 & a-b & x+b-c \end{vmatrix} = 0, \; R_2 \to R_2 - R_1;\; R_3 \to R_3 - R_1$$

On expanding by first column, we get

$$(x+a+b+c)\,[(x-b+c)(x+b-c)-(a-b)(a-c)] = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (x+a+b+c)\,[x^2-(b-c)^2-(a^2-ac-ab+bc)] = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (x+a+b+c)\,(x^2-b^2-c^2+2bc-a^2+ac+ab-bc] = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (x+a+b+c)\,(x^2-a^2-b^2-c^2+ab+bc+ca) = 0$$

Either $x+a+b+c=0 \;\Rightarrow\; x = -(a+b+c)$

or $x^2-a^2-b^2-c^2+ab+bc+ca = 0$

$$\Rightarrow \quad x = \pm\sqrt{a^2+b^2+c^2-ab-bc-ca}$$

Hence, $x = -(a+b+c)$ is one root of the given equation. **Proved.**

Example 30. *Find the value of*

$$\begin{vmatrix} (b+c)^2 & a^2 & a^2 \\ b^2 & (c+a)^2 & b^2 \\ c^2 & c^2 & (a+b)^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. By $C_1 \to C_1 - C_3, C_2 \to C_2 - C_3$, we get

$$\begin{vmatrix} (b+c)^2-a^2 & a^2-a^2 & a^2 \\ b^2-b^2 & (c+a)^2-b^2 & b^2 \\ c^2-(a+b)^2 & c^2-(a+b)^2 & (a+b)^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{vmatrix} (a+b+c)(b+c-a) & 0 & a^2 \\ 0 & (a+b+c)(c+a-b) & b^2 \\ (a+b+c)(c-a-b) & (a+b+c)(c-a-b) & (a+b)^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

On taking out $(a+b+c)$ as common from 1st and 2nd columns, we get

$$= (a+b+c)^2\begin{vmatrix} b+c-a & 0 & a^2 \\ 0 & c+a-b & b^2 \\ c-a-b & c-a-b & (a+b)^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= (a+b+c)^2 \begin{vmatrix} -a+b+c & 0 & a^2 \\ 0 & a-b+c & b^2 \\ -2b & -2a & 2ab \end{vmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 - (R_1 + R_2)$$

$$= -2(a+b+c)^2 \begin{vmatrix} -a+b+c & 0 & a^2 \\ 0 & a-b+c & b^2 \\ b & a & -ab \end{vmatrix}$$

On expanding by first row, we get

$$= -2\,(a+b+c)^2\,[(-a+b+c)\,\{-ab\,(a-b+c) - ab^2\} + a^2\,\{0 - b\,(a-b+c)\}]$$
$$= -2\,(a+b+c)^2\,[(-a+b+c)\,(-a^2b - abc) - a^2b\,(a-b+c)]$$
$$= -2ab\,(a+b+c)^2\,[(-a+b+c)\,(-a-c) - a\,(a-b+c)]$$
$$= -2ab\,(a+b+c)^2\,[a^2 + ac - ab - bc - ac - c^2 - a^2 + ab - ac]$$
$$= -2ab\,(a+b+c)^2\,(-bc - ac - c^2) = 2abc\,(a+b+c)^2\,(b+a+c)$$
$$= 2abc\,(a+b+c)^3.$$

Ans.

Example 31. *Using properties of determinants, solve for x :*

$$\begin{vmatrix} a+x & a-x & a-x \\ a-x & a+x & a-x \\ a-x & a-x & a+x \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

Solution. Given that,

$$\begin{vmatrix} a+x & a-x & a-x \\ a-x & a+x & a-x \\ a-x & a-x & a+x \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

Applying $C_1 \to C_1 + C_2 + C_3$, we get

$$\begin{vmatrix} 3a-x & a-x & a-x \\ 3a-x & a+x & a-x \\ 3a-x & a-x & a+x \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (3a-x)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a-x & a-x \\ 1 & a+x & a-x \\ 1 & a-x & a+x \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

Now applying $R_2 \to R_2 - R_1$ and $R_3 \to R_3 - R_1$, we get

$$\Rightarrow \quad (3a-x)\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a-x & a-x \\ 0 & 2x & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 2x \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

Expanding along C_1, we get

$\Rightarrow\ (3a-x)\,(4x^2 - 0) = 0$

$\Rightarrow\ 4x^2\,(3a-x) = 0 \ \Rightarrow$ If $4x^2 = 0$, then $x = 0$

$\Rightarrow$ If $3a - x = 0$, then $x = 3a$ Hence, $x = 0$ or $3a$ **Ans.**

Example 32. *Using properties of determinants, prove the following*

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1+a & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1+b & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1+c \end{vmatrix} = abc\left(\frac{1}{a} + \frac{1}{b} + \frac{1}{c} + 1\right)$$

Solution. Let $$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 1+a & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1+b & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1+c \end{vmatrix}$$

Taking a, b and c common from R_1, R_2 and R_3 rows respectively.

$$\Delta = abc \begin{vmatrix} \frac{1+a}{a} & \frac{1}{a} & \frac{1}{a} \\ \frac{1}{b} & \frac{1+b}{b} & \frac{1}{b} \\ \frac{1}{c} & \frac{1}{c} & \frac{1+c}{c} \end{vmatrix} = abc \begin{vmatrix} 1+\frac{1}{a} & \frac{1}{a} & \frac{1}{a} \\ \frac{1}{b} & 1+\frac{1}{b} & \frac{1}{b} \\ \frac{1}{c} & \frac{1}{c} & 1+\frac{1}{c} \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= abc \begin{bmatrix} 1+\frac{1}{a}+\frac{1}{b}+\frac{1}{c} & 1+\frac{1}{a}+\frac{1}{b}+\frac{1}{c} & 1+\frac{1}{a}+\frac{1}{b}+\frac{1}{c} \\ \frac{1}{b} & 1+\frac{1}{b} & \frac{1}{b} \\ \frac{1}{c} & \frac{1}{c} & 1+\frac{1}{c} \end{bmatrix} \quad R_1 \to R_1 + R_2 + R_3$$

Taking $\left(1+\frac{1}{a}+\frac{1}{b}+\frac{1}{c}\right)$ common from R_1, we get

$$\Delta = abc\left(1+\frac{1}{a}+\frac{1}{b}+\frac{1}{c}\right) \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ \frac{1}{b} & 1+\frac{1}{b} & \frac{1}{b} \\ \frac{1}{c} & \frac{1}{c} & 1+\frac{1}{c} \end{vmatrix}$$

Operate : $C_2 \to C_2 - C_1$; $C_3 \to C_3 - C_1$

$$\Delta = abc\left(\frac{1}{a}+\frac{1}{b}+\frac{1}{c}+1\right) \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ \frac{1}{b} & 1 & 0 \\ \frac{1}{c} & 0 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = abc\left(\frac{1}{a}+\frac{1}{b}+\frac{1}{c}+1\right)$$

(On expanding by R_1). **Proved.**

Example 33. *Prove that :*

$$\begin{vmatrix} a & a^2 & bc \\ b & b^2 & ac \\ c & c^2 & ab \end{vmatrix} = (a-b)(b-c)(c-a)(ab+bc+ac).$$

Solution. Let $$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} a & a^2 & bc \\ b & b^2 & ac \\ c & c^2 & ab \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= \frac{1}{abc} \begin{vmatrix} a^2 & a^3 & abc \\ b^2 & b^3 & abc \\ c^2 & c^3 & abc \end{vmatrix} = \frac{1}{abc}.abc \begin{vmatrix} a^2 & a^3 & 1 \\ b^2 & b^3 & 1 \\ c^2 & c^3 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$\therefore \qquad \Delta = \begin{vmatrix} a^2-b^2 & a^3-b^3 & 0 \\ b^2-c^2 & b^3-c^3 & 0 \\ c^2 & c^3 & 1 \end{vmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_1 \to R_1 - R_2 \\ R_2 \to R_2 - R_3 \\ \\ \end{matrix}$$

$$= (a-b)(b-c)\begin{vmatrix} a+b & a^2+ab+b^2 & 0 \\ b+c & b^2+bc+c^2 & 0 \\ c^2 & c^3 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

Expand by C_3

$$= (a-b)(b-c).1\begin{vmatrix} a+b & a^2+ab+b^2 \\ b+c & b^2+bc+c^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= (a-b)(b-c)\begin{vmatrix} a+b & a^2+ab+b^2 \\ c-a & bc+c^2-a^2-ab \end{vmatrix} \quad R_2 \to R_2 - R_1$$

$$= (a-b)(b-c)\begin{vmatrix} a+b & a^2+ab+b^2 \\ c-a & b(c-a)+(c^2-a^2) \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= (a-b)(b-c)(c-a)\begin{vmatrix} a+b & a^2+ab+b^2 \\ 1 & b+c+a \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= (a-b)\,(b-c)\,(c-a)\,[(a+b)\,(a+b+c) - 1\,.\,(a^2+ab+b^2)]$$

$$= (a-b)\,(b-c)\,(c-a)\,(ab+bc+ac).$$ **Proved.**

EXERCISE 17.2

Expand the following determinants, using properties of the determinants :

1. $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 3 & 7 \\ 4 & 9 & 1 \\ 2 & 7 & 6 \end{vmatrix}$ **Ans.** 51.

2. $\begin{vmatrix} x & a & a \\ a & x & a \\ a & a & x \end{vmatrix}$ **Ans.** $(x+2a)\,(x-a)^2$

3. Show that $\begin{vmatrix} 0 & x-a & x-b \\ x-a & 0 & x-c \\ x-b & x-c & 0 \end{vmatrix} = 2(x-a)\,(x-b)\,(x-c).$

4. $\begin{vmatrix} \frac{1}{a} & a & bc \\ \frac{1}{b} & b & ca \\ \frac{1}{c} & c & ab \end{vmatrix} = 0$

5. $\begin{vmatrix} x+y & y+z & z+x \\ z & x & y \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = 0.$

6. $\begin{vmatrix} x+4 & 2x & 2x \\ 2x & x+4 & 2x \\ 2x & 2x & x+4 \end{vmatrix} = (5x+4)(4-x)^2$

7. $\begin{vmatrix} a+b+2c & a & b \\ c & b+c+2a & b \\ c & a & c+a+2b \end{vmatrix} = 2\,(a+b+c)^3$

8. $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & x+y & x^2+y^2 \\ 1 & y+z & y^2+z^2 \\ 1 & z+x & z^2+x^2 \end{vmatrix} = (x-y)(y-z)(z-x).$

9. $\begin{vmatrix} b^2c^2 & bc & b+c \\ c^2a^2 & ca & c+a \\ a^2b^2 & ab & a+b \end{vmatrix} = 0$

10. $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & a^2-bc \\ 1 & b & b^2-ca \\ 1 & c & c^2-ab \end{vmatrix} = 0.$

11. $\begin{vmatrix} a & a+b & a+b+c \\ 2a & 3a+2b & 4a+3b+2c \\ 3a & 6a+3b & 10a+6b+3c \end{vmatrix} = a^3.$

12. $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & bc \\ 1 & b & ca \\ 1 & c & ab \end{vmatrix} = (a-b)(b-c)(c-a).$

13. $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & a^2 \\ 1 & b & b^2 \\ 1 & c & c^2 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & a & bc \\ 1 & b & ca \\ 1 & c & ab \end{vmatrix}$

14. $\begin{vmatrix} a+b+c & -c & -b \\ -c & a+b+c & -a \\ -b & -a & a+b+c \end{vmatrix} = 2(a+b)(b+c)(c+a).$

15. $\begin{vmatrix} a^2 & bc & ac+c^2 \\ a^2+ab & b^2 & ac \\ ab & b^2+bc & c^2 \end{vmatrix} = 4a^2b^2c^2$

16. $\begin{vmatrix} 3a & -a+b & -a+c \\ -b+a & 3b & -b+c \\ -c+a & -c+b & 3c \end{vmatrix} = 3\,(a+b+c)\,(ab+bc+ca)$

17.6 FACTOR THEOREM

If the elements of a determinant are polynomials in a variable x and if the substitution $x = a$ makes two rows (or columns) identical then $(x - a)$ is a factor of the determinant.

When two rows are identical, the value of the determinant is zero. The expansion of a determinant being polynomial in x vanishes on putting $x = a$, then $x - a$ is its factor by the Remainder theorem.

Example 34. *Show that*

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ x & y & z \\ x^2 & y^2 & z^2 \end{vmatrix} = (x-y)(y-z)(z-x)$$

Solution. If we put $x = y$, $y = z$ *and* $z = x$ then in each case two columns become identical and the determinant vanishes.

$\therefore$ $(x - y)$, $(y - z)$, and $(z - x)$ are the factors.

Since the determinant is of third degree, the other factor can be numerical only k (say).

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ x & y & z \\ x^2 & y^2 & z^2 \end{vmatrix} = k(x-y)(y-z)(z-x) \qquad \dots (1)$$

This leading term (product of the elements of the diagonal elements) L.H.S. of (1) is yz^2 and in the expansion of R.H.S. *i.e.* $k\,(x - y)\,(y - z)\,(z - x)$ we get kyz^2

Equating the coefficient of yz^2 on both sides of (1), we have

$$k = 1$$

Hence, the expansion $= (x - y)\,(y - z)\,(z - x)$. **Proved.**

Example 35. *Using properties of determinants, prove that*

$$\begin{vmatrix} x & x^2 & 1+px^3 \\ y & y^2 & 1+py^3 \\ z & z^2 & 1+pz^3 \end{vmatrix} = (1+pxyz)\,(x-y)\,(y-z)\,(z-x), \text{ where } p \text{ is any scalar.}$$

Solution. We have,

$$\begin{vmatrix} x & x^2 & 1+px^3 \\ y & y^2 & 1+py^3 \\ z & z^2 & 1+pz^3 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} x & x^2 & 1 \\ y & y^2 & 1 \\ z & z^2 & 1 \end{vmatrix} + \begin{vmatrix} x & x^2 & px^3 \\ y & y^2 & py^3 \\ z & z^2 & pz^3 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} x & x^2 & 1 \\ y & y^2 & 1 \\ z & z^2 & 1 \end{vmatrix} + pxyz \begin{vmatrix} 1 & x & x^2 \\ 1 & y & y^2 \\ 1 & z & z^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 1 & x & x^2 \\ 1 & y & y^2 \\ 1 & z & z^2 \end{vmatrix} + pxyz \begin{vmatrix} 1 & x & x^2 \\ 1 & y & y^2 \\ 1 & z & z^2 \end{vmatrix} = (1+pxyz) \begin{vmatrix} 1 & x & x^2 \\ 1 & y & y^2 \\ 1 & z & z^2 \end{vmatrix} \qquad \ldots (1)$$

If we put $x = y$ then two rows become identical and the determinant vanishes.

$\Rightarrow$ $(x-y)$ is a factor.

If we put $y = z$ then two rows become identical and the determinant vanishes.

$\Rightarrow$ $(y-z)$ is a factor.

If we put $z = x$, then two rows become identical and the determinant vanishes.

$\Rightarrow$ $(z-x)$ is also a factor.

Since the determinant is of the third degree, the other factor can be numerical k,

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & x & x^2 \\ 1 & y & y^2 \\ 1 & z & z^2 \end{vmatrix} = k(x-y)\,(y-z)\,(z-x) \qquad \ldots (2)$$

This leading term (product of the diagonal elements) L.H.S of (2) is yz^2 and in the expansion of R.H.S. i.e., $k\,(x-y)\,(y-z)\,(z-x)$ we get kyz^2.

Equating the coefficients of yz^2, we have $k = 1$

$$\text{Hence, } \begin{vmatrix} 1 & x & x^2 \\ 1 & y & y^2 \\ 1 & z & z^2 \end{vmatrix} = (x-y)\,(y-z)\,(z-x) \qquad \ldots (3)$$

From (1) and (3), we have

$$\text{The given determinant } = \begin{vmatrix} x & x^2 & 1+px^3 \\ y & y^2 & 1+py^3 \\ z & z^2 & 1+pz^3 \end{vmatrix} = (1+pxyz)\,(x-y)\,(y-z)\,(z-x)$$ **Proved.**

Example 36. *Factorize*

$$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ a^2 & b^2 & c^2 \\ a^3 & b^3 & c^3 \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. Putting $a = b$, $C_1 = C_2$ and hence $\Delta = 0$.

$\therefore$ $a - b$ is a factor of Δ.

Similarly, $b - c$, $c - a$ are also factors of Δ.

$\therefore$ $(a-b)\,(b-c)\,(c-a)$ is a third degree factor of Δ which itself is of the fifth degree as is judged from the leading term b^2c^3.

$\therefore$ The remaining factor must be of the second degree. As Δ is symmetrical in a, b, c the remaining factor must, therefore, be of the form

$$k(a^2+b^2+c^2)+l(ab+bc+ca)$$

$\therefore\quad \Delta = (a-b)(b-c)(c-a)\{k(a^2+b^2+c^2)+l(ab+bc+ca)\}$

If $k \neq 0$, we shall get terms like a^4b, b^4c etc. which do not occur in Δ. Hence, k must be zero.

$\therefore\quad \Delta = (a-b)(b-c)(c-a)\{0+l(ab+bc+ca)\}$

or $\quad \Delta = l(a-b)(b-c)(c-a)(ab+bc+ca)$

The leading term in $\quad \Delta = b^2c^3$

The corresponding term on R.H.S. $= l\,b^2c^3$

$\therefore\quad l = 1$

Hence, $\Delta = (a-b)(b-c)(c-a)(ab+bc+ca)$. **Ans.**

EXERCISE 17.3

1. Evaluate, without expanding

$$\begin{vmatrix} a & a^2 & 1+a^3 \\ b & b^2 & 1+b^3 \\ c & c^2 & 1+c^3 \end{vmatrix}$$

Ans. $(a-b)(b-c)(c-a)(1+abc)$

2. Solve the equation $\begin{vmatrix} x^3-a^3 & x^2 & x \\ b^3-a^3 & b^2 & b \\ c^3-a^3 & c^2 & c \end{vmatrix} = 0,\ b \neq c,\ c \neq 0,\ b \neq 0.$ **Ans.** $x = \dfrac{a^3}{bc},\ x = b,\ x = c$

3. Without expanding, show that

$$\Delta = \begin{vmatrix} (a-x)^2 & (a-y)^2 & (a-z)^2 \\ (b-x)^2 & (b-y)^2 & (b-z)^2 \\ (c-x)^2 & (c-y)^2 & (c-z)^2 \end{vmatrix} = 2(a-b)(b-c)(c-a)(x-y)(y-z)(z-x).$$

4. Show (without expanding) that

$$\begin{vmatrix} bc & a^2 & a^2 \\ b^2 & ca & b^2 \\ c^2 & c^2 & ab \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} bc & ab & ca \\ ab & ca & bc \\ ca & bc & ab \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= -\frac{1}{2}(ab+bc+ca)[(ab-bc)^2+(bc-ca)^2+(ca-ab)^2]$$

17.7 SPECIAL TYPES OF DETERMINANTS

***(i)* Ortho-symmetric Determinant.** If every element of the leading diagonal is the same and the equidistant elements from the diagonal are equal, then the determinant is said to be ortho-symmetric determinant.

$$\begin{vmatrix} a & h & g \\ h & a & f \\ g & f & a \end{vmatrix}$$

***(ii)* Skew-Symmetric Determinant.** If the elements of the leading diagonal are all zero and every other element is equal to its conjugate with sign changed, the determinant is said to be Skew-symmetric.

$$\begin{vmatrix} 0 & -a & -b \\ a & 0 & -c \\ b & c & 0 \end{vmatrix}$$

Property 1. *A Skew-symmetric determinant of odd order vanishes.*

Example 37. *Prove that*

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 0 & -a & -b \\ a & 0 & -c \\ b & c & 0 \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

Solution. Taking out (– 1) common from each of the three columns

$$\Delta = (-1)^3 \begin{vmatrix} 0 & a & b \\ -a & 0 & c \\ -b & -c & 0 \end{vmatrix}$$

Changing rows into columns

$$\Delta = (-1)^3 \begin{vmatrix} 0 & -a & -b \\ a & 0 & -c \\ b & c & 0 \end{vmatrix} = (-1)^3\,\Delta = -\,\Delta \quad \text{or} \quad 2\Delta = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad \Delta = 0$$

17.8 APPLICATION OF DETERMINANTS

Area of triangle. We know that the area of a triangle, whose vertices are (x_1, y_1), (x_2, y_2) and (x_3, y_3) is given by

$$\Delta = \frac{1}{2}\left[x_1(y_2 - y_3) - x_2(y_1 - y_3) + x_3(y_1 - y_2)\right]$$

$$= \frac{1}{2}\left[x_1\begin{vmatrix} y_2 & 1 \\ y_3 & 1 \end{vmatrix} - x_2\begin{vmatrix} y_1 & 1 \\ y_3 & 1 \end{vmatrix} + x_3\begin{vmatrix} y_1 & 1 \\ y_2 & 1 \end{vmatrix}\right] = \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} x_1 & y_1 & 1 \\ x_2 & y_2 & 1 \\ x_3 & y_3 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

Note. Since area is always a positive quantity, therefore we always take the absolute value of the determinant for the area.

Condition of collinearity of three points. Let $A(x_1, y_1)$, $B(x_2, y_2)$ and $C(x_3, y_3)$ be three points. Then, A, B, C are collinear

$\Leftrightarrow$ area of triangle $ABC = 0$

$$\Leftrightarrow \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} x_1 & y_1 & 1 \\ x_2 & y_2 & 1 \\ x_3 & y_3 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = 0 \Leftrightarrow \begin{vmatrix} x_1 & y_1 & 1 \\ x_2 & y_2 & 1 \\ x_3 & y_3 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

Proved.

Example 38. *Using determinants, find the area of the triangle with vertices (– 2, –3), (3, 2) and (–1, –8).*

Solution. The area of the given triangle $= \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} -2 & -3 & 1 \\ 3 & 2 & 1 \\ -1 & -8 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$

$$= \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} -2 & -3 & 1 \\ 5 & 5 & 0 \\ 1 & -5 & 0 \end{vmatrix} \qquad \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_1 \end{matrix}$$

Expand by C_3 we get

$$= \frac{1}{2}.1.\begin{vmatrix} 5 & 5 \\ 1 & -5 \end{vmatrix} = \frac{1}{2}(-25 - 5) = \frac{|-30|}{2} = 15 \text{ sq. units}$$

Ans.

Example 39. *If area of triangle is 35 sq. units with verties (2, –6), (5, 4) and (k, 4). Then find k.*

Solution. Let the vertices of triangle be A (2, –6), B (5, 4) and C (k, 4). Since the area of the triangle ABC is 35 sq. units, we have

$$\frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} 2 & -6 & 1 \\ 5 & 4 & 1 \\ k & 4 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = \pm 35$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} 2 & -6 & 1 \\ 3 & 10 & 0 \\ k-2 & 10 & 0 \end{vmatrix} = \pm 35 \qquad \text{[Applying } R_2 \to R_2 - R_1 \text{ and } R_3 \to R_3 - R_1\text{]}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} 3 & 10 \\ k-2 & 10 \end{vmatrix} = \pm 35 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \frac{1}{2}\{30 - 10\,(k-2)\} = \pm 35 \qquad \text{[Exanding along } C_3\text{]}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad 30 - 10\,k + 20 = \pm 70$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad 10\,k = 50 \mp 70 \quad \Rightarrow \quad k = 12 \quad \text{or} \quad k = -2$$

Ans.

Example 40. *Show that points* $A\,(a, b+c), B\,(b, c+a), C\,(c, a+b)$ *are collinear.*

Solution. The area of the triangle formed by the given points:

$$= \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} a & b+c & 1 \\ b & c+a & 1 \\ c & a+b & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

Operate : $R_2 \to R_2 - R_1, R_3 \to R_3 - R_1$

$$= \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} a & b+c & 1 \\ b-a & a-b & 0 \\ c-a & a-c & 0 \end{vmatrix} = \frac{1}{2}(1)\{(b-a)\,(a-c) - (a-b)\,(c-a)\} \quad \text{[Expanding along C}_3\text{]}$$

$$= \frac{1}{2}[ab - bc - a^2 + ac - ac + a^2 + bc - ab] = \frac{1}{2}[0] = 0$$

Hence, the given points are collinear. **Proved.**

Example 41. *Using determinants, show that the points (11, 7), (5, 5) and (– 1, 3) are collinear.*

Solution. The area of the triangle formed by the given points

$$= \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} 11 & 7 & 1 \\ 5 & 5 & 1 \\ -1 & 3 & 1 \end{vmatrix}$$

Operate : $R_1 \to R_1 - R_2$; $R_2 \to R_2 - R_3$

$$= \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} 6 & 2 & 0 \\ 6 & 2 & 0 \\ -1 & 3 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = \frac{1}{2}.0 = 0. \qquad (\because\ R_1 \text{ and } R_2 \text{ are identical})$$

Hence, the given points are collinear. **Proved.**

Example 42. *Using determinants, find the area of the triangle whose vertices are (1, 4) (2, 3) and (– 5, – 3). Are the given points collinear?*

Solution. Area of the required triangle

$$= \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 4 & 1 \\ 2 & 3 & 1 \\ -5 & -3 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = \frac{1}{2}[1(3+3) - 4(2+5) + 1(-6+15)] = \frac{1}{2}[6 - 28 + 9) = \frac{13}{2} \neq 0$$

Hence, the given points are not collinear. **Ans.**

Example 43. *Find the equation of line joining* A (1, 2) *and* B (3, 6) *using determinants.*

Solution. Let $P\,(x, y)$ be any point on AB. Then, area of triangle ABP is zero. So,

$$\frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 3 & 6 & 1 \\ x & y & 1 \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 4 & 0 \\ x-1 & y-2 & 0 \end{vmatrix} = 0 \quad \text{[Applying } R_2 \to R_2 - R_1 \text{ and } R_3 \to R_3 - R_1]$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{1}{2}(1)\{2(y-2) - 4(x-1)\} = 0 \qquad \text{[Expanding along } C_3]$$

$\Rightarrow$ $y - 2 - 2x + 2 = 0$ $\Rightarrow$ $y = 2x$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 17.4

1. Using determinants, find the area of the triangle with vertices (2,– 7), (1, 3), (10, 8). **Ans.** $A = \frac{95}{2}$
2. Using determinants, show that the points (3, 8), (– 4, 2) and (10, 14) are collinear.
3. Using determinants, find the area of the triangle whose vertices are (– 2, 4), (2, – 6) and (5, 4). Are the given points collinear ? **Ans.** Area = 35, not collinear
4. Using determinants, find the area of the triangle whose vertices are (– 1, – 3), (2, 4) and (3, – 1). Are the given points collinear ? **Ans.** Area = 11, not collinear
5. Using determinants, find the area of the triangle whose vertices are (1, – 1), (2, 4) and (– 3, 5). Are the given points collinear ? **Ans.** Area = 13, not collinear
6. Find the value of α, so that the points (1, – 5), (– 4, 5) and (α, 7) are collinear. **Ans.** $\alpha = -5$
7. Find the value of x, if the area of triangle is 35 square cms with vertices (x, 4), (2, – 6), (5, 4). **Ans.** $x = -2, 12$
8. Using determinants find the value of k, so that the points (k, 2 – 2k), (– k + 1, 2k) and (– 4 – k, 6 – 2 k) may be collinear. **Ans.** $k = -1, \frac{1}{2}$
9. If the points (x, – 2), (5, 2) and (8, 8) are collinear, find x using determinants. **Ans.** $x = 3$
10. If the points (3, – 2), (x, 2) and (8, 8) are collinear, find x using determinants. **Ans.** $x = 5$

17.9 SOLUTION OF SIMULTANEOUS LINEAR EQUATIONS BY DETERMINANTS (CRAMER'S RULE)

Let us solve the following equations.

$$a_1 x + b_1 y + c_1 z = d_1$$
$$a_2 x + b_2 y + c_2 z = d_2$$
$$a_3 x + b_3 y + c_3 z = d_3$$

Let
$$D = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} \quad \text{or} \quad x\,D = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 x & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 x & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 x & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$$

Multiplying the 2nd column by y and 3rd column by z and adding to the 1st column, we get

$$x\,D_1 = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 x + b_1 y + c_1 z & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 x + b_2 y + c_2 z & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 x + b_3 y + c_3 z & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}, \quad x\,D_1 = \begin{vmatrix} d_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ d_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ d_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad x = \frac{\begin{vmatrix} d_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ d_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ d_3 & b_1 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}}{\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}} = \frac{D_1}{D}$$

Similarly, $$y = \frac{D_2}{D} = \frac{\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & d_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & d_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & d_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}}{\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}} \Rightarrow z = \frac{D_3}{D} = \frac{\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & d_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & d_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & d_3 \end{vmatrix}}{\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}}$$

Thus, $$x = \frac{D_1}{D}, \quad y = \frac{D_2}{D}, \quad z = \frac{D_3}{D}$$ **Ans.**

Example 44. *Solve the following system of equations using Cramer's rule :*

$$5x - 7y + z = 11$$
$$6x - 8y - z = 15$$
$$3x + 2y - 6z = 7$$

Solution. The given equations are

$$5x - 7y + z = 11$$
$$6x - 8y - z = 15$$
$$3x + 2y - 6z = 7$$

Here, $$D = \begin{vmatrix} 5 & -7 & 1 \\ 6 & -8 & -1 \\ 3 & 2 & -6 \end{vmatrix} = 5\,(48 + 2) + 7\,(-36 + 3) + 1\,(12 + 24) = 55$$

$$D_1 = \begin{vmatrix} 11 & -7 & 1 \\ 15 & -8 & -1 \\ 7 & 2 & -6 \end{vmatrix} = 11\,(48 + 2) + 7\,(-90 + 7) + 1\,(30 + 56) = 55$$

$$D_2 = \begin{vmatrix} 5 & 11 & 1 \\ 6 & 15 & -1 \\ 3 & 7 & -6 \end{vmatrix} = 5\,(-90 + 7) - 11\,(-36 + 3) + 1\,(42 - 45) = -55$$

$$D_3 = \begin{vmatrix} 5 & -7 & 11 \\ 6 & -8 & 15 \\ 3 & 2 & 7 \end{vmatrix} = 5\,(-56 - 30) + 7\,(42 - 45) + 11\,(12 + 24) = -55$$ **Proved.**

By Cramer's Rule

$$x = \frac{D_1}{D} = \frac{55}{55} = 1, \quad y = \frac{D_2}{D} = \frac{-55}{55} = -1, \quad z = \frac{D_3}{D} = \frac{-55}{55} = -1$$

Hence, $x = 1, y = -1, z = -1$ **Ans.**

Example 45. *Solve, by determinants, the following set of simultaneous equations :*

$$5x - 6y + 4z = 15$$
$$7x + 4y - 3z = 19$$
$$2x + y + 6z = 46$$

Solution. $$D = \begin{vmatrix} 5 & -6 & 4 \\ 7 & 4 & -3 \\ 2 & 1 & 6 \end{vmatrix} = 419 \qquad D_1 = \begin{vmatrix} 15 & -6 & 4 \\ 19 & 4 & -3 \\ 46 & 1 & 6 \end{vmatrix} = 1257$$

$$D_2 = \begin{vmatrix} 5 & 15 & 4 \\ 7 & 19 & -3 \\ 2 & 46 & 6 \end{vmatrix} = 1676 \qquad D_3 = \begin{vmatrix} 5 & -6 & 15 \\ 7 & 4 & 19 \\ 2 & 1 & 46 \end{vmatrix} = 2514$$

By Cramer's Rule

$$x = \frac{D_1}{D} = \frac{1257}{419} = 3 \qquad y = \frac{D_2}{D} = \frac{1676}{419} = 4. \qquad z = \frac{D_3}{D} = \frac{2514}{419} = 6.$$

Hence $x = 3, y = 4, z = 6$ **Ans.**

Example 46. *Solve, using Cramer's rule*

$$3x - 2y + 4z = 5$$
$$x + y + 3z = 2$$
$$-x + 2y - z = 1$$

Solution.
$$D = \begin{vmatrix} 3 & -2 & 4 \\ 1 & 1 & 3 \\ -1 & 2 & -1 \end{vmatrix} = -5 \qquad D_1 = \begin{vmatrix} 5 & -2 & 4 \\ 2 & 1 & 3 \\ 1 & 2 & -1 \end{vmatrix} = -33$$

$$D_2 = \begin{vmatrix} 3 & 5 & 4 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ -1 & 1 & -1 \end{vmatrix} = -13 \qquad D_3 = \begin{vmatrix} 3 & -2 & 5 \\ 1 & 1 & 2 \\ -1 & 2 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = 12$$

By Cramer's Rule

$$x = \frac{D_1}{D} = \frac{-33}{-5} = \frac{33}{5} \qquad y = \frac{D_2}{D} = \frac{-13}{-5} = \frac{13}{5} \qquad z = \frac{D_3}{D} = \frac{12}{-5} = \frac{-12}{5}$$

Hence, $x = \frac{33}{5}, \quad y = \frac{13}{5}, \quad z = \frac{-12}{5}$ **Ans.**

Example 47. *Solve the following system of equations by using determinants :*

$$x + y + z = 1$$
$$ax + by + cz = k$$
$$a^2x + b^2y + c^2z = k^2$$

Solution. We have,

$$D = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ a & b & c \\ a^2 & b^2 & c^2 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ a & b-a & c-a \\ a^2 & b^2-a^2 & c^2-a^2 \end{vmatrix} \quad [\text{Applying } C_2 \to C_2 - C_1 \text{ and } C_3 \to C_3 - C_1]$$

$$= (b-a)(c-a) \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ a & 1 & 1 \\ a^2 & b+a & c+a \end{vmatrix}$$

$$= (b-a)(c-a).1. \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ b+a & c+a \end{vmatrix} \quad [\text{Expanding along } R_1]$$

$$= (b-a)(c-a)(c+a-b-a) = (b-c)(c-a)(a-b) \quad ...(1)$$

$$D_1 = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ k & b & c \\ k^2 & b^2 & c^2 \end{vmatrix} = (b-c)(c-k)(k-b) \quad [\text{Replacing } a \text{ by } k \text{ in (1)}]$$

$$D_2 = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ a & k & c \\ a^2 & k^2 & c^2 \end{vmatrix} = (k-c)(c-a)(a-k) \qquad \text{[Replacing } b \text{ by } k \text{ in (1)]}$$

and $$D_3 = \begin{vmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ a & b & k \\ a^2 & b^2 & k^2 \end{vmatrix} = (a-b)(b-k)(k-a) \qquad \text{[Replacing } c \text{ by } k \text{ in (1)]}$$

$$\therefore \quad x = \frac{D_1}{D} = \frac{(b-c)(c-k)(k-b)}{(b-c)(c-a)(a-b)} = \frac{(c-k)(k-b)}{(c-a)(a-b)},$$

$$y = \frac{D_2}{D} = \frac{(k-c)(c-a)(a-k)}{(b-c)(c-a)(a-b)} = \frac{(k-c)(a-k)}{(b-c)(a-b)},$$

and $$z = \frac{D_3}{D} = \frac{(a-b)(b-k)(k-a)}{(a-b)(b-c)(c-a)} = \frac{(b-k)(k-a)}{(b-c)(c-a)}$$

Hence, $x = \dfrac{(c-k)(k-b)}{(c-a)(a-b)}$, $y = \dfrac{(k-c)(a-k)}{(b-c)(a-b)}$ and $z = \dfrac{(b-k)(k-a)}{(b-c)(c-a)}$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 17.6

Using Cramer's Rule, solve the following system of equations :

1. $2x - 3y = 7$
$7x - 3y = 10$
Ans. $x = \frac{3}{5}, y = -\frac{29}{15}$

2. $2x + y = 1$
$x - 2y = 8$
Ans. $x = 2, y = -3$

3. $2x + 3y = 10$
$x + 6y = 4.$
Ans. $x = \frac{16}{3}, y = -\frac{2}{9}$

4. $5x + 2y = 3$
$3x + 2y = 5.$
Ans. $x = -1, \ y = 4$

5. $7x - 2y = -7$
$2x - y = 1.$
Ans. $x = -3, y = -7$

6. $x - 2y = 4$
$-3x + 5y = -7$
Ans. $x = -6, \ y = -5$

7. $x - 4y - z = 11$
$2x - 5y + 2z = 39$
$-3x + 2y + z = 1.$
Ans. $x = -1, \ y = -5, \ z = 8$

8. $x + 3y - 2z = 5$
$2x + y + 4z = 8$
$6x + y - 3z = 5$
Ans. $x = 1, \ y = 2, \ z = 1$

9. $x + 2y + 5z = 23$
$3x + y + 4z = 26$
$6x + y + 7z = 47$
Ans. $x = 4, \ y = 2, \ z = 3$

10. $x + y + z = 1$
$3x + 5y + 6z = 4$
$9x + 2y - 36x = 17$
Ans. $x = \frac{1}{3}, y = 1, z = -\frac{1}{3}$

11. $2y - z = 0$
$x + 3y = -4$
$3x + 4y = 3$
Ans. $x = 5, y = -3, z = -6$

12. $x + y + z = -1$
$x + 2y + 3z = -4$
$x + 3y + 4z = -6$
Ans. $x = 1, \ y = -1, \ z = -1$

13. $x + y + z = 1$
Ans. $x = \dfrac{(2-k)(3-k)}{2}, \quad y = \dfrac{(1-k)(3-k)}{-1}, \quad z = \dfrac{(1-k)(2-k)}{2}$

$x + 2y + 3z = k$
$1^2x + 2^2y + 3^2z = k^2$

14. Show that there are three real values of λ for which the equations:

$$(a - \lambda)\, x + by + cz = 0$$
$$bx + (c - \lambda)\, y + az = 0$$
$$cx + ay + (b - \lambda)\, z = 0$$

are simultaneously true, and that the product of these values of λ is $\begin{vmatrix} a & b & c \\ b & c & a \\ c & a & b \end{vmatrix}$

17.10 RULE FOR MULTIPLICATION OF TWO DETERMINANTS

Multiply the elements of the first row of Δ_1 with the corresponding elements of the first, the second and the third row of Δ_2 respectively.

Their respective sums form the elements of the first row of $\Delta_1\Delta_2$. Similarly multiply the elements of the second row of Δ_1 with the corresponding elements of first, second and third row of the Δ_2 to from the second row of $\Delta_1\Delta_2$ and so on.

Example 48. *Find the product*

$$\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} \times \begin{vmatrix} \alpha_1 & \beta_1 & \gamma_1 \\ \alpha_2 & \beta_2 & \gamma_2 \\ \alpha_3 & \beta_3 & \gamma_3 \end{vmatrix}$$

Solution. Produce of the given determinants

$$= \begin{vmatrix} a_1\alpha_1 + b_1\beta_1 + c_1\gamma_1 & a_1\alpha_2 + b_1\beta_2 + c_1\gamma_2 & a_1\alpha_3 + b_1\beta_3 + c_1\gamma_3 \\ a_2\alpha_1 + b_2\beta_1 + c_2\gamma_1 & a_2\alpha_2 + b_2\beta_2 + c_2\gamma_2 & a_2\alpha_3 + b_2\beta_3 + c_2\gamma_3 \\ a_3\alpha_1 + b_3\beta_1 + c_3\gamma_1 & a_3\alpha_2 + b_3\beta_2 + c_3\gamma_2 & a_3\alpha_2 + b_3\beta_3 + c_3\gamma_3 \end{vmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

Example 49. *Find*

$$\begin{vmatrix} a & b & c \\ b & c & a \\ c & a & b \end{vmatrix} \times \begin{vmatrix} -a & c & b \\ -b & a & c \\ -c & b & a \end{vmatrix}$$ *and hence show that*

$$= \begin{vmatrix} 2bc - a^2 & c^2 & b^2 \\ c^2 & 2ca - b^2 & a^2 \\ b^2 & a^2 & 2ab - c^2 \end{vmatrix} = (a^3 + b^3 + c^3 - 3abc)^2$$

Solution. Product of the given determinants

$$= \begin{vmatrix} -a^2 + bc + bc & -ab + ab + c^2 & -ac + b^2 + ac \\ -ab + c^2 + ab & -b^2 + ac + ac & -bc + bc + a^2 \\ -ca + ca + b^2 & -bc + a^2 + bc & -c^2 + ab + ab \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} 2bc - a^2 & c^2 & b^2 \\ c^2 & 2ca - b^2 & a^2 \\ b^2 & a^2 & 2ab - c^2 \end{vmatrix}$$

Now $\begin{vmatrix} -a & c & b \\ -b & a & c \\ -c & b & a \end{vmatrix} = (-1)^2 \begin{vmatrix} a & b & c \\ b & c & a \\ c & a & b \end{vmatrix} = a(bc - a^2) - b(b^2 - ac) + c(ab - c^2)$

$$= -(a^3 + b^3 + c^3 - 3abc)$$

Product $= (a^3 + b^3 + c^3 - 3abc)^2$ **Proved**

Example 50. *Prove that the determinant*

$$\begin{vmatrix} 2b_1+c_1 & c_1+3a_1 & 2a_1+3b_1 \\ 2b_2+c_2 & c_2+3a_2 & 2a_2+3b_2 \\ 2b_3+c_3 & c_3+3a_3 & 2a_3+3b_3 \end{vmatrix}$$

is a multiple of the determinant $\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$ *and find the other factor.*

Solution. $\begin{vmatrix} 2b_1+c_1 & c_1+3a_1 & 2a_1+3b_1 \\ 2b_2+c_2 & c_2+3a_2 & 2a_2+3b_2 \\ 2b_3+c_3 & c_3+3a_3 & 2a_3+3b_3 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} \times \begin{vmatrix} 0 & 2 & 1 \\ 3 & 0 & 1 \\ 2 & 3 & 0 \end{vmatrix}$ **Ans.**

Example 51. *Prove that* $\begin{vmatrix} 1 & \cos(\beta-\alpha) & \cos(\gamma-\alpha) \\ \cos(\alpha-\beta) & 1 & \cos(\gamma-\beta) \\ \cos(\alpha-\gamma) & \cos(\beta-\gamma) & 1 \end{vmatrix} = 0$

Solution. $\begin{vmatrix} \cos\alpha & \sin\alpha & 0 \\ \cos\beta & \sin\beta & 0 \\ \cos\gamma & \sin\gamma & 0 \end{vmatrix} \times \begin{vmatrix} \cos\alpha & \sin\alpha & 0 \\ \cos\beta & \sin\beta & 0 \\ \cos\gamma & \sin\gamma & 0 \end{vmatrix} = 0$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{vmatrix} \cos^2\alpha+\sin^2\alpha & \cos\alpha\cos\beta+\sin\alpha\sin\beta & \cos\alpha\cos\gamma+\sin\alpha\sin\gamma \\ \cos\beta\cos\alpha+\sin\beta\sin\alpha & \cos^2\beta+\sin^2\beta & \cos\beta\cos\gamma+\sin\beta\sin\gamma \\ \cos\gamma\cos\alpha+\sin\gamma\sin\alpha & \cos\gamma\cos\beta+\sin\gamma\sin\beta & \cos^2\gamma+\sin^2\gamma \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

The above determinant can be split into eight determinants and each determinants having identical column is zero. **Proved.**

CHAPTER

18

ALGEBRA OF MATRICES

18.1 DEFINITION

Let us consider a set of simultaneous equations,

$$x + 2y + 3z + 5t = 0$$
$$4x + 2y + 5z + 7t = 0$$
$$3x + 4y + 2z + 6t = 0.$$

Now we write down the coefficients of x, y, z, t of the above equations and enclose them within brackets and then we get

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 5 \\ 4 & 2 & 5 & 7 \\ 3 & 4 & 2 & 6 \end{bmatrix}$$

The above system of numbers, arranged in a rectangular array in rows and columns and bounded by the brackets, is called a matrix.

It has got 3 rows and 4 columns and in all $3 \times 4 = 12$ elements. It is termed as 3×4 matrix, to be read as [3 by 4 matrix]. In the double subscripts of an element, the first subscript determines the row and the second subscript determines the column in which the element lies, a_{ij} lies in the ith row and jth column.

18.2 VARIOUS TYPES OF MATRICES

(*i*) **Row Matrix.** If a matrix has only one row and any number of columns, it is called a *Row matrix*, *e.g.,*

$$[2\ 7\ 3\ 9]$$

(*b*) **Column Matrix.** A matrix, having one column and any number of rows, is called a *Column matrix, e.g.,* $\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix}$

(*c*) **Null Matrix or Zero Matrix.** Any matrix, in which all the elements are zeros, is called a *Zero matrix* or *Null matrix e.g.,*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*d*) **Square Matrix.** A matrix, in which the number of rows is equal to the number of columns, is called a square matrix *e.g.,*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 5 \\ 1 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*e*) **Diagonal Matrix.** A square matrix is called a diagonal matrix, if all its non-diagonal elements are zero *e.g.,*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 3 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*f*) **Scalar matrix.** A diagonal matrix in which all the diagonal elements are equal to a scalar, say (k) is called a scalar matrix.

For example;

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 2 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} -6 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -6 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -6 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & -6 \end{bmatrix}$$

i.e., $A = [a_{ij}]_{n \times n}$ is a scalar matrix if $a_{ij} = \begin{cases} 0, & \text{when } i \neq j \\ k, & \text{when } i = j \end{cases}$

(*g*) **Unit or Identity Matrix.** A square matrix is called a unit matrix if all the diagonal elements are unity and non-diagonal elements are zero *e.g.,*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*h*) **Symmetric Matrix.** A square matrix will be called symmetric, if for all values of i and j, $a_{ij} = a_{ji}$ *i.e.,* $A' = A$

$$e.g., \begin{bmatrix} a & h & g \\ h & b & f \\ g & f & c \end{bmatrix}$$

(*i*) **Skew Symmetric Matrix.** A square matrix is called skew symmetric matrix, if

(1) $a_{ij} = -a_{ji}$ for all values of i and j, or $A' = -A$

(2) All diagonal elements are zero, *e.g.,*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & -h & -g \\ h & 0 & -f \\ g & f & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*j*) **Triangular Matrix.** (Echelon form) A square matrix, all of whose elements below the leading diagonal are zero, is called an *upper triangular matrix.* A square matrix, all of whose elements above the leading diagonal are zero, is called *a lower triangular matrix e.g.,*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 2 \\ 0 & 4 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 6 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 & 0 \\ 4 & 1 & 0 \\ 5 & 6 & 7 \end{bmatrix}$$

Upper triangular matrix   Lower triangular matrix

(*k*) **Transpose of a Matrix.** If in a given matrix A, we interchange the rows and the corresponding columns, the new matrix obtained is called the transpose of the matrix A and is denoted by A' or A^T *e.g.,*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 1 & 0 & 5 \\ 6 & 7 & 8 \end{bmatrix}, \; A' = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 6 \\ 3 & 0 & 7 \\ 4 & 5 & 8 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*l*) **Orthogonal Matrix.** A square matrix A is called an orthogonal matrix if the product of the matrix A and the transpose matrix A' is an identity matrix *e.g.,*

$$A.\, A' = I$$

if $|A| = 1$, matrix A is proper.

(*m*) **Conjugate of a Matrix**

Let
$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1+i & 2-3i & 4 \\ 7+2i & -i & 3-2i \end{bmatrix}$$

Conjugate of matrix A is $\bar{A}$

$$\bar{A} = \begin{bmatrix} 1-i & 2+3i & 4 \\ 7-2i & i & 3+2i \end{bmatrix}$$

(*n*) **Matrix A^{θ}.** Transpose of the conjugate of a matrix A is denoted by A^{θ}.

Let
$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1+i & 2-3i & 4 \\ 7+2i & -i & 3-2i \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\bar{A} = \begin{bmatrix} 1-i & 2+3i & 4 \\ 7-2i & +i & 3+2i \end{bmatrix}$$

$$(\bar{A})' = \begin{bmatrix} 1-i & 7-2i \\ 2+3i & i \\ 4 & 3+2i \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^{\theta} = \begin{bmatrix} 1-i & 7-2i \\ 2+3i & i \\ 4 & 3+2i \end{bmatrix}$$

(*o*) **Unitary Matrix.** A square matrix A is said to be unitary if

$$A^{\theta} A = I$$

e.g.
$$A = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1+i}{2} & \frac{-1+i}{2} \\ \frac{1+i}{2} & \frac{1-i}{2} \end{bmatrix}, \quad A^{\theta} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1-i}{2} & \frac{1-i}{2} \\ \frac{-1-i}{2} & \frac{1+i}{2} \end{bmatrix}, \quad A \cdot A^{\theta} = I$$

(*p*) **Hermitian Matrix.** A square matrix $A = (a_{ij})$ is called Hermitian matrix, if every *i-jth* element of A is equal to conjugate complex *j-ith* element of A.

In other words, $a_{ij} = \bar{a}_{ji}$

e.g.
$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2+3i & 3+i \\ 2-3i & 2 & 1-2i \\ 3-i & 1+2i & 5 \end{bmatrix}$$

Necessary and sufficient condition for a matrix A to be Hermitian is that $A = A^{\theta}$ *i.e.* conjugate transpose of A

$$\Rightarrow \qquad A = (\bar{A})'.$$

(*q*) **Skew Hermitian Matrix.** A square matrix $A = (a_{ij})$ will be called a Skew Hermitian matrix if every *i-j*th element of A is equal to negative conjugate complex of *j-i*th element of A.

In other words, $a_{ij} = -\bar{a}_{ji}$

All the elements in the principal diagonal will be of the form

$$a_{ii} = -\bar{a}_{ii} \quad \text{or} \quad a_{ii} + \bar{a}_{ii} = 0$$

If $\quad a_{ii} = a + ib \quad$ then $\quad \bar{a}_{ii} = a - ib$

$$(a + ib) + (a - ib) = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad 2a = 0 \Rightarrow a = 0$$

So, a_{ii} is pure imaginary $\Rightarrow a_{ii} = 0$.

Hence, all the diagonal elements of a Skew Hermitian Matrix are either zeros or pure imaginary.

$$e.g. \quad \begin{bmatrix} i & 2-3i & 4+5i \\ -(2+3i) & 0 & 2i \\ -(4-5i) & 2i & -3i \end{bmatrix}$$

The necessary and sufficient condition for a matrix A to be Skew Hermitian is that

$$A^{\theta} = -A$$

$$(\bar{A})' = -A$$

(*r*) **Idempotent Matrix.** A matrix, such that $A^2 = A$ is called Idempotent Matrix.

$$e.g.\ A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & -2 & -4 \\ -1 & 3 & 4 \\ 1 & -2 & -3 \end{bmatrix}, A^2 = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & -2 & -4 \\ -1 & 3 & 4 \\ 1 & -2 & -3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -2 & -4 \\ -1 & 3 & 4 \\ 1 & -2 & -3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & -2 & -4 \\ -1 & 3 & 4 \\ 1 & -2 & -3 \end{bmatrix} = A$$

(*s*) **Periodic Matrix.** A matrix A will be called a Periodic Matrix, if

$$A^{k+1} = A$$

where k is a +ve integer. If k is the least + ve integer, for which $A^{k+1} = A$, then k is said to be the period of A. If we choose $k = 1$, we get $A^2 = A$ and we call it to be idempotent matrix.

(*t*) **Nilpotent Matrix.** A matrix will be called a Nilpotent matrix, if $A^k = 0$ (null matrix) where k is a +ve integer ; if however k is the least +ve integer for which $A^k = 0$, then k is the *index* of the nilpotent matrix.

$$e.g.,\ A = \begin{bmatrix} ab & b^2 \\ -a^2 & -ab \end{bmatrix}, A^2 = \begin{bmatrix} ab & b^2 \\ -a^2 & -ab \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} ab & b^2 \\ -a^2 & -ab \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = 0$$

A is nilpotent matrix whose index is 2.

(*u*) **Involuntary Matrix.** A matrix A will be called an Involuntary matrix, if $A^2 = I$ (unit matrix). Since $I^2 = I$ always $\therefore$ Unit matrix is involuntary.

(*v*) **Equal Matrices.** Two matrices are said to be equal if

(*i*) They are of the same order.

(*ii*) The elements in the corresponding positions are equal.

Thus if $\quad A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 \\ 1 & 4 \end{bmatrix}, B = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 \\ 1 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$

Here $\quad A = B$

(*w*) **Singular Matrix.** If the determinant of the matrix is zero, then the matrix is known as singular matrix e.g. $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 3 & 6 \end{bmatrix}$ is singular matrix, because $|A| = 6 - 6 = 0$.

Example 1. *Find the values of x, y, z and 'a' which satisfy the matrix equation.*

$$\begin{bmatrix} x+3 & 2y+x \\ z-1 & 4a-6 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & -7 \\ 3 & 2a \end{bmatrix}$$

Solution. As the given matrices are equal, so their corresponding elements are equal.

$$x + 3 = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad x = -3 \qquad ...(1)$$
$$2y + x = -7 \qquad ...(2)$$
$$z - 1 = 3 \quad \Rightarrow \quad z = 4 \qquad ...(3)$$
$$4a - 6 = 2a \quad \Rightarrow \quad a = 3 \qquad ...(4)$$

Putting the value of $x = -3$ from (1) into (2), we have

$$2y - 3 = -7 \quad \Rightarrow \quad y = -2$$

Hence, $x = -3, \quad y = -2, \quad z = 4, \quad a = 3$ **Ans.**

18.3 ADDITION OF MATRICES

If A and B be two matrices of the same order, then their sum, $A + B$ is defined as the matrix, each element of which is the sum of the corresponding elements of A and B.

Thus if $$A = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & 2 & 5 \\ 1 & 3 & -6 \end{bmatrix}, \quad B = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 2 \\ 3 & 1 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$$

then $$A + B = \begin{bmatrix} 4+1 & 2+0 & 5+2 \\ 1+3 & 3+1 & -6+4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 5 & 2 & 7 \\ 4 & 4 & -2 \end{bmatrix}$$

If $A = [a_{ij}], \; B = [b_{ij}]$ then $A + B = [a_{ij} + b_{ij}]$

Example 2. *Show that any square matrix can be expressed as the sum of two matrices, one symmetric and the other anti-symmetric.*

Solution. Let A be a given square matrix.

Then $$A = \frac{1}{2}(A + A') + \frac{1}{2}(A - A')$$

Now, $(A + A')' = A' + A = A + A'.$

$\therefore \quad A + A'$ is a symmetric matrix.

Also, $(A - A')' = A' - A = -(A - A')$

$\therefore \quad A - A'$ or $\frac{1}{2}$ (A – A′) is an anti-symmetric matrix.

$$\boxed{A = \frac{1}{2}(A + A') + \frac{1}{2}(A - A')}$$

Square matrix = Symmetric matrix + Anti-symmetric matrix **Proved.**

Example 3. *Write matrix A given below as the sum of a symmetric and a skew symmetric matrix.*

$$A = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 2 & 4 \\ -2 & 5 & 3 \\ -1 & 6 & 3 \end{pmatrix}$$

Solution. $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 4 \\ -2 & 5 & 3 \\ -1 & 6 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ On transposing, we get $A' = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & -1 \\ 2 & 5 & 6 \\ 4 & 3 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$

On adding A and A′, we have

$$A + A' = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 4 \\ -2 & 5 & 3 \\ -1 & 6 & 3 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & -1 \\ 2 & 5 & 6 \\ 4 & 3 & 3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 & 3 \\ 0 & 10 & 9 \\ 3 & 9 & 6 \end{bmatrix} \qquad ...(1)$$

On subtracting A' from A, we get

$$A - A' = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 4 \\ -2 & 5 & 3 \\ -1 & 6 & 3 \end{bmatrix} - \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & -1 \\ 2 & 5 & 6 \\ 4 & 3 & 3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 4 & 5 \\ -4 & 0 & -3 \\ -5 & 3 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{...(2)}$$

On adding (1) and (2), we have

$$2A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 & 3 \\ 0 & 10 & 9 \\ 3 & 9 & 6 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 4 & 5 \\ -4 & 0 & -3 \\ -5 & 3 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\text{A} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & \frac{3}{2} \\ 0 & 5 & \frac{9}{2} \\ \frac{3}{2} & \frac{9}{2} & 3 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 2 & \frac{5}{2} \\ -2 & 0 & -\frac{3}{2} \\ \frac{-5}{2} & \frac{3}{2} & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

A = [Symmetric matrix] + [Skew symmetric matrix.] **Ans.**

Example 4. *Express* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & -3 \\ 3 & 0 & 5 \\ 5 & 6 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ *as the sum of a lower triangular matrix and upper triangular matrix.*

Solution. Let $A = L + U$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & -3 \\ 3 & 0 & 5 \\ 5 & 6 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} a & 0 & 0 \\ b & c & 0 \\ d & e & f \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 1 & p & q \\ 0 & 1 & r \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & -3 \\ 3 & 0 & 5 \\ 5 & 6 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} a+1 & 0+p & 0+q \\ b+0 & c+1 & 0+r \\ d+0 & e+0 & f+1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Equating the corresponding elements on both the sides, we get

$$\begin{array}{lll} a+1 = 1 & p = -2 & q = -3 \\ b = 3 & c+1 = 0 & r = 5 \\ d = 5 & e = 6 & f+1 = 1 \end{array}$$

On solving these equations, we get

$$\begin{array}{lll} a = 0 & p = -2 & q = -3 \\ b = 3 & c = -1 & r = 5 \\ d = 5 & e = 6 & f = 0 \end{array}$$

Hence, $L = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 3 & -1 & 0 \\ 5 & 6 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ and $U = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & -3 \\ 0 & 1 & 5 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.**

18.4 PROPERTIES OF MATRIX ADDITION

Only matrices of the same order can be added or subtracted.

(*i*) **Commutative Law.** $A + B = B + A$.

(*ii*) **Associative law.** $A + (B + C) = (A + B) + C$.

18.5 SUBTRACTION OF MATRICES

The difference of two matrices is a matrix, each element of which is obtained by subtracting the elements of the second matrix from the corresponding element of the first.

$$A - B = [a_{ij} - b_{ij}]$$

Thus
$$\begin{bmatrix} 8 & 6 & 4 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix} - \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 5 & 1 \\ 7 & 6 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$$
$$= \begin{bmatrix} 8-3 & 6-5 & 4-1 \\ 1-7 & 2-6 & 0-2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 5 & 1 & 3 \\ -6 & -4 & -2 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

18.6 SCALAR MULTIPLE OF A MATRIX

If a matrix is multiplied by a scalar quantity k, then each element is multiplied by k, *i.e.*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 4 & 5 & 6 \\ 6 & 7 & 9 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$3A = 3\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 4 & 5 & 6 \\ 6 & 7 & 9 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3\times 2 & 3\times 3 & 3\times 4 \\ 3\times 4 & 3\times 5 & 3\times 6 \\ 3\times 6 & 3\times 7 & 3\times 9 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 6 & 9 & 12 \\ 12 & 15 & 18 \\ 18 & 21 & 27 \end{bmatrix}$$

EXERCISE 18.1

1. (*i*) If $A = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 7 & 1 \\ 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 5 & 0 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$, represent it as A = B + C where B is a symmetric and C is a skew-symmetric matrix.

(*b*) Express $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 0 \\ 3 & 7 & 1 \\ 5 & 9 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ as a sum of symmetric and skew-symmetric matrix.

Ans. (*i*) $A = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & \frac{9}{2} & 3 \\ \frac{9}{2} & 3 & 2 \\ 3 & 2 & 5 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 0 & \frac{5}{2} & -2 \\ \frac{-5}{2} & 0 & 2 \\ 2 & -2 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ (*b*) $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & \frac{5}{2} & \frac{5}{2} \\ \frac{5}{2} & 7 & 5 \\ \frac{5}{2} & 5 & 3 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 0 & -\frac{1}{2} & -\frac{5}{2} \\ \frac{1}{2} & 0 & -4 \\ \frac{5}{2} & 4 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

2. Matrices A and B are such that

$$3A - 2B = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ -2 & -1 \end{bmatrix} \text{ and } -4A + B = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 2 \\ -4 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

Find A and B. **Ans.** $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & -1 \\ 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$, $B = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & -2 \\ 4 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$

3. Given $3\begin{bmatrix} x & y \\ z & w \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} x & 6 \\ -1 & 2w \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 4 & x+y \\ z+w & 3 \end{bmatrix}$

Find x, y, z and w. **Ans.** $x = 2,\ y = 4,\ z = 1,\ w = 3$

4. If $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 2 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 3 \\ 1 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$, $B = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** (*i*) $= \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 10 & 3 \\ 8 & 3 & 6 \\ 2 & 2 & 13 \end{bmatrix}$, (*ii*) $= \begin{bmatrix} -4 & -2 & -4 \\ -5 & -4 & 9 \\ 3 & 3 & -6 \end{bmatrix}$

Find (*i*) $2A + 3B$ (*ii*) $3A - 4B$.

18.7 MULTIPLICATION

The product of two matrices A and B is only possible if the number of columns in A is equal to the number of rows in B.

Let $A = [a_{ij}]$ be an $m \times n$ matrix and $B = [b_{ij}]$ be an $n \times p$ matrix. Then the product AB of these matrices is an $m \times p$ matrix $C = [c_{ij}]$ where

$$c_{ij} = a_{i1}\, b_{1j} + a_{i2}\, b_{2j} + a_{i3}\, b_{3j} + ... + a_{in}\, b_{nj}$$

18.8 $(AB)' = B'A'$

If A and B are two matrices conformal for product AB, then show that $(AB)' = B'A'$, where dash represents transpose of a matrix.

Solution. Let $A = (a_{ij})$ be an $m \times n$ matrix and $B = (b_{ij})$ be $n \times p$ matrix.

Since AB is $m \times p$ matrix, $(AB)'$ is a $p \times m$ matrix.

Further B' is $p \times n$ matrix and A' an $n \times m$ matrix and therefore $B'\, A'$ is a $p \times m$ matrix.

Then $(AB)'$ and $B'\, A'$ are matrices of the same order.

Now the (j, i)th element of $(AB)' = (i, j)$th element of $(AB) = \sum_{k=1}^{n} a_{ik} b_{kj}$ ...(1)

Also the jth row of B' is $b_{1j}, b_{2j} .... b_{nj}$, and ith column of A' is $a_{i1}, a_{i2}, a_{i3} .... a_{in}$.

$\therefore$ (j, i)th element of $B'A' = \sum_{k=1}^{n} b_{kj} a_{ik}$ ...(2)

From (1) and (2), we have (j, i)th element of $(AB)' = (j, i)$ th element of $B'A'$.

As the matrices $(AB)'$ and $B'A'$ are of the same order and their corresponding elements are equal, we have $(AB)' = B'A'$. **Proved.**

18.9 PROPERTIES OF MATRIX MULTIPLICATION

1. Multiplication of matrices is not commutative.
$$AB \neq BA$$
2. Matrix multiplication is associative, if conformability is assured.
$$A\,(BC) = (AB)\,C$$
3. Matrix multiplication is distributive with respect to addition.
$$A\,(B + C) = AB + AC$$
4. Multiplication of matrix A by unit matrix.
$$AI = IA = A$$
5. Multiplicative inverse of a matrix exists if $|A| \neq 0$.
$$A \,.\, A^{-1} = A^{-1} \,.\, A = I$$
6. If A is a square then $A \times A = A^2$, $A \times A \times A = A^3$.
7. $A^0 = I$
8. $I^n = I$, where n is positive integer.

Example 5. *If* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 2 & 3 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$ *and* $B = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 \\ -1 & 0 \\ 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$

obtain the product AB and explain why BA is not defined.

Solution. The number of columns in A is 3 and the number of rows in B is also 3, therefore the product AB is defined.

$$AB = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 2 & 3 & 4 \end{bmatrix}\begin{array}{l} R_1 \\ R_2 \\ R_3 \end{array} \times \begin{array}{c} \begin{array}{cc} C_1 & C_2 \end{array} \\ \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 \\ -1 & 0 \\ 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix} \end{array} = \begin{bmatrix} R_1\,C_1 & R_1\,C_2 \\ R_2\,C_1 & R_2\,C_2 \\ R_3\,C_1 & R_3\,C_2 \end{bmatrix}$$

R_1, R_2, R_3 are rows of A and C_1, C_2 are columns of B.

$$= \begin{bmatrix} \boxed{\begin{matrix} 0 & 1 & 2 \end{matrix}} & \boxed{\begin{matrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 2 \end{matrix}} & \boxed{\begin{matrix} 0 & 1 & 2 \end{matrix}} & \boxed{\begin{matrix} -2 \\ 0 \\ -1 \end{matrix}} \\ \boxed{\begin{matrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \end{matrix}} & \boxed{\begin{matrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 2 \end{matrix}} & \boxed{\begin{matrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \end{matrix}} & \boxed{\begin{matrix} -2 \\ 0 \\ -1 \end{matrix}} \\ \boxed{\begin{matrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \end{matrix}} & \boxed{\begin{matrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 2 \end{matrix}} & \boxed{\begin{matrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \end{matrix}} & \boxed{\begin{matrix} -2 \\ 0 \\ -1 \end{matrix}} \end{bmatrix}$$

For convenience of multiplication, we write the columns in horizontal rectangles.

$$= \begin{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \boxed{0 \quad 1 \quad 2} \\ \boxed{1 \quad -1 \quad 2} \end{matrix} & \begin{matrix} \boxed{0 \quad 1 \quad 2} \\ \boxed{-2 \quad 0 \quad -1} \end{matrix} \\ \begin{matrix} \boxed{1 \quad 1 \quad 3} \\ \boxed{1 \quad -1 \quad 2} \end{matrix} & \begin{matrix} \boxed{1 \quad 2 \quad 3} \\ \boxed{-2 \quad 0 \quad -1} \end{matrix} \\ \begin{matrix} \boxed{2 \quad 3 \quad 4} \\ \boxed{1 \quad -1 \quad 2} \end{matrix} & \begin{matrix} \boxed{2 \quad 3 \quad 4} \\ \boxed{-2 \quad 0 \quad -1} \end{matrix} \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 0 \times 1 + 1 \times (-1) + 2 \times 2 & 0 \times (-2) + 1 \times 0 + 2 \times (-1) \\ 1 \times 1 + 2 \times (-1) + 3 \times 2 & 1 \times (-2) + 2 \times 0 + 3 \times (-1) \\ 2 \times 1 + 3 \times (-1) + 4 \times 2 & 2 \times (-2) + 3 \times 0 + 4 \times (-1) \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 0 - 1 + 4 & 0 + 0 - 2 \\ 1 - 2 + 6 & -2 + 0 - 3 \\ 2 - 3 + 8 & -4 + 0 - 4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -2 \\ 5 & -5 \\ 7 & -8 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

Since, the number of columns of B is (2) $\neq$ the number of rows of A is 3, BA is not defined.

Example 6. *If* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & 3 \\ 2 & 3 & -1 \\ -3 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ *and* $B = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

from the products AB and BA, and show that $AB \neq BA$.

Solution. Here,
$$AB = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & 3 \\ 2 & 3 & -1 \\ -3 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 1 - 0 + 3 & 0 - 2 + 6 & 2 - 4 + 0 \\ 2 + 0 - 1 & 0 + 3 - 2 & 4 + 6 - 0 \\ -3 + 0 + 2 & 0 + 1 + 4 & -6 + 2 + 0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & 4 & -2 \\ 1 & 1 & 10 \\ -1 & 5 & -4 \end{bmatrix}$$

$C_1 \quad C_2$

$$BA = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & 3 \\ 2 & 3 & -1 \\ -3 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1+0-6 & -2+0+2 & 3-0+4 \\ 0+2-6 & 0+3+2 & 0-1+4 \\ 1+4+0 & -2+6+0 & 3-2+0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -5 & 0 & 7 \\ -4 & 5 & 3 \\ 5 & 4 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$AB \neq BA$ **Proved.**

Example 7. *If* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ -2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$, $B = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ *and* $C = \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 1 \\ 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

Verify that $(AB)\,C = A\,(BC)$ *and* $A\,(B + C) = AB + AC$.

Solution. We have, $AB = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ -2 & 3 \end{bmatrix} \times \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} (1)(2)+(2)(2) & (1)(1)+(2)(3) \\ (-2)(2)+(3)(2) & (-2)(1)+(3)(3) \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 6 & 7 \\ 2 & 7 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$BC = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix} \times \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 1 \\ 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -6+2 & 2+0 \\ -6+6 & 2+0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -4 & 2 \\ 0 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AC = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ -2 & 3 \end{bmatrix} \times \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 1 \\ 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -3+4 & 1+0 \\ 6+6 & -2+0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ 12 & -2 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\mathrm{B} + \mathrm{C} = \begin{bmatrix} 2+(-3) & 1+1 \\ 2+2 & 3+0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 2 \\ 4 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*i*) $$(AB)\,C = \begin{bmatrix} 6 & 7 \\ 2 & 7 \end{bmatrix} \times \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 1 \\ 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -18+14 & 6+0 \\ -6+14 & 2+0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -4 & 6 \\ 8 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \qquad ...(1)$$

and $$A\,(BC) = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ -2 & 3 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} -4 & 2 \\ 0 & 2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -4+0 & 2+4 \\ 8+0 & -4+6 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -4 & 6 \\ 8 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \qquad ...(2)$$

Thus from (1) and (2), we get

$$(AB)\,C = A\,(BC)$$

(*ii*) $$A\,(B + C) = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ -2 & 3 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 2 \\ 4 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} -1+8 & 2+6 \\ 2+12 & -4+9 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 7 & 8 \\ 14 & 5 \end{bmatrix} \qquad ...(3)$$

$$AB + AC = \begin{bmatrix} 6+1 & 7+1 \\ 2+12 & 7-2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 7 & 8 \\ 14 & 5 \end{bmatrix} \qquad ...(4)$$

Thus from (3) and (4), we get

$A\,(B + C) = AB + AC$ **Verified.**

Example 8. *If* $A = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 \\ 2 & 2 & 1 \end{pmatrix}$ *show that* $A^2 - 4A - 5I = 0$ *where I, 0 are the unit matrix and the null matrix of order 3 respectively. Use this result to find* A^{-1}. (*A.M.I.E., Summer 2004*)

Solution. Here, we have $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 \\ 2 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

$$A^2 = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 \\ 2 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 \\ 2 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 9 & 8 & 8 \\ 8 & 9 & 8 \\ 8 & 8 & 9 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^2 - 4A - 5I = \begin{bmatrix} 9 & 8 & 8 \\ 8 & 9 & 8 \\ 8 & 8 & 9 \end{bmatrix} - 4\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 \\ 2 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix} - 5\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^2 - 4A - 5I = \begin{bmatrix} 9-4-5 & 8-8-0 & 8-8-0 \\ 8-8-0 & 9-4-5 & 8-8-0 \\ 8-8-0 & 8-8-0 & 9-4-5 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^2 - 4A - 5I = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad 5I = A^2 - 4A$$

Multiplying by A^{-1}, we get

$$5A^{-1} = A - 4I$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 \\ 2 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix} - 4\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & -3 & 2 \\ 2 & 2 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^{-1} = \frac{1}{5}\begin{bmatrix} -3 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & -3 & 2 \\ 2 & 2 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

Example 9. *Show by means of an example that in matrices $AB = 0$ does not necessarily mean that either $A = 0$ or $B = 0$, where 0 stands for the null matrix.*

Solution. Let $$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 1 \\ -3 & 2 & -1 \\ -2 & 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}, \quad B = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 2 & 4 & 6 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AB = \begin{bmatrix} 1-2+1 & 2-4+2 & 3-6+3 \\ -3+4-1 & -6+8-2 & -9+12-3 \\ -2+2+0 & -4+4+0 & -6+6+0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AB = 0.$$

But here neither $A = 0$ nor $B = 0$. **Proved.**

Example 10. *If $AB = AC$, it is not necessarily true that $B = C$ i.e. like ordinary algebra, the equal matrices in the identity cannot be cancelled.*

Solution. Let $$AB = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -3 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & -3 \\ 4 & -3 & -1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 4 & 1 & 0 \\ 2 & 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & -2 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -3 & -3 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 15 & 0 & -5 \\ -3 & 15 & 0 & -5 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AC = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -3 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & -3 \\ 4 & -3 & -1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & -1 & -2 \\ 3 & -2 & -1 & -1 \\ 2 & -5 & -1 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -3 & -3 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 15 & 0 & -5 \\ -3 & 15 & 0 & -5 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Proved.**

Here, $AB = AC$. But $B \neq C$.

Example 11. *Represent each of the transformations*

$x_1 = 3y_1 + 2y_2$, $\quad y_1 = z_1 + 2z_2$ *and* $\quad x_2 = -y_1 + 4y_2$, $\; y_2 = 3z_1$

by the use of matrices and find the composite transformation which expresses x_1, x_2 in terms of z_1, z_2.

Solution. The equations in the matrix form are

$$\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 2 \\ -1 & 4 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} y_1 \\ y_2 \end{bmatrix} \qquad ...(1)$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} y_1 \\ y_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 3 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} z_1 \\ z_2 \end{bmatrix} \qquad ...(2)$$

Substituting the values of y_1, y_2 in (1), we get

$$\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 2 \\ -1 & 4 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 3 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} z_1 \\ z_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 9 & 6 \\ 11 & -2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} z_1 \\ z_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 9z_1 + 6z_2 \\ 11z_1 - 2z_2 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$x_1 = 9z_1 + 6z_2, \quad x_2 = 11z_1 - 2z_2$$ **Ans.**

Example 12. *Prove that the product of two matrices*

$$\begin{bmatrix} \cos^2\theta & \cos\theta\sin\theta \\ \cos\theta\sin\theta & \sin^2\theta \end{bmatrix} \text{ and } \begin{bmatrix} \cos^2\phi & \cos\phi\sin\phi \\ \cos\phi\sin\phi & \sin^2\phi \end{bmatrix}$$

is zero when θ *and* ϕ *differ by an odd multiple of* $\frac{\pi}{2}$.

Solution. $= \begin{bmatrix} \cos^2\theta & \cos\theta\sin\theta \\ \cos\theta\sin\theta & \sin^2\theta \end{bmatrix} \times \begin{bmatrix} \cos^2\phi & \cos\phi\sin\phi \\ \cos\phi\sin\phi & \sin^2\phi \end{bmatrix}$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} \cos^2\theta\cos^2\phi + \cos\theta\sin\theta\cos\phi\sin\phi & \cos^2\theta\cos\phi\sin\phi + \cos\theta\sin\theta\sin^2\phi \\ \cos\theta\sin\theta\cos^2\phi + \sin^2\theta\cos\phi\sin\phi & \cos\theta\sin\theta\cos\phi\sin\phi + \sin^2\theta\sin^2\phi \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta\cos\phi(\cos\theta\cos\phi + \sin\theta\sin\phi) & \cos\theta\sin\phi(\cos\theta\cos\phi + \sin\theta\sin\phi) \\ \sin\theta\cos\phi(\cos\theta\cos\phi + \sin\theta\sin\phi) & \sin\theta\sin\phi(\cos\theta\cos\phi + \sin\theta\sin\phi) \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta\cos\phi\cos(\theta-\phi) & \cos\theta\sin\phi\cos(\theta-\phi) \\ \sin\theta\cos\phi\cos(\theta-\phi) & \sin\theta\sin\phi\cos(\theta-\phi) \end{bmatrix}$$

Given $\quad \theta - \phi = (2n+1)\frac{\pi}{2}$

$$\cos(\theta-\phi) = \cos(2n+1)\frac{\pi}{2} = 0$$

$\therefore$ The product $= \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = 0.$ **Proved.**

Example 13. *Verify that*

$$A = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & -2 \\ -2 & 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix} \text{ is orthogonal.}$$

Solution. $A = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & -2 \\ -2 & 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix} \quad \therefore \quad A' = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -2 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 \\ 2 & -2 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$

$$AA' = \frac{1}{9}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & -2 \\ -2 & 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -2 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 \\ 2 & -2 & -1 \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{9}\begin{bmatrix} 9 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 9 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 9 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = I$$

Hence, A is an orthogonal matrix. **Verified.**

Example 14. *Determine the values of* α, β, γ *when*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 2\beta & \gamma \\ \alpha & \beta & -\gamma \\ \alpha & -\beta & \gamma \end{bmatrix} \text{ is orthogonal.}$$

Solution. Let $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 2\beta & \gamma \\ \alpha & \beta & -\gamma \\ \alpha & -\beta & \gamma \end{bmatrix}$

On transposing A, we have

$$A' = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & \alpha & \alpha \\ 2\beta & \beta & -\beta \\ \gamma & -\gamma & \gamma \end{bmatrix}$$

If A is orthogonal, then $AA' = I$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 2\beta & \gamma \\ \alpha & \beta & -\gamma \\ \alpha & -\beta & \gamma \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 0 & \alpha & \alpha \\ 2\beta & \beta & -\beta \\ \gamma & -\gamma & \gamma \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 4\beta^2+\gamma^2 & 2\beta^2-\gamma^2 & -2\beta^2+\gamma^2 \\ 2\beta^2-\gamma^2 & \alpha^2+\beta^2+\gamma^2 & \alpha^2-\beta^2-\gamma^2 \\ -2\beta^2+\gamma^2 & \alpha^2-\beta^2-\gamma^2 & \alpha^2+\beta^2+\gamma^2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Equating the corresponding elements, we have

$$\left.\begin{aligned} 4\beta^2+\gamma^2 &= 1 \\ 2\beta^2-\gamma^2 &= 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \Rightarrow \beta = \pm\frac{1}{\sqrt{6}}, \gamma = \pm\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}$$

But $\alpha^2 + \beta^2 + \gamma^2 = 1$ as $\beta = \pm\frac{1}{\sqrt{6}}, \gamma = \pm\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}, \alpha = \pm\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}$ **Ans.**

Example 15. *Prove that*

$$(AB)^n = A^n \cdot B^n, \text{ if } A \cdot B = B \cdot A$$

Solution.

$$(AB)^1 = AB = (A) \cdot (B)$$

$$(AB)^2 = (AB) \cdot (AB) = (ABA) \cdot B = \{ A\,(AB) \} \cdot B$$
$$= (A^2B) \cdot B = A^2\,(B \cdot B) = A^2 \cdot B^2$$

Suppose that

$$(AB)^n = A^n \cdot B^n$$

$$(AB)^{n+1} = (AB)^n \cdot (AB) = (A^n \cdot B^n) \cdot (AB) = A^n \cdot (B^nA) \cdot B$$
$$= A^n \cdot (B^{n-1} \cdot BA) \cdot B = A^n \cdot (B^{n-1} \cdot AB) \cdot B$$
$$= A^n \cdot (B^{n-2} \cdot B \cdot AB) \cdot B = A^n \cdot (B^{n-2} \cdot AB \cdot B) \cdot B$$
$$= A^n \cdot (B^{n-2} \cdot AB^2) \cdot B, \text{ continuing the process } n \text{ times.}$$
$$= A^n \cdot (A \cdot B^n) \cdot B = A^n \cdot (A \cdot B^{n+1}) = A^{n+1} \cdot B^{n+1}$$

Hence, taking the above to be true for $n = n$, we have shown that it is true for $n = n + 1$ and also it was true for $n = 1, 2, \ldots$ so it is universally true. **Proved.**

EXERCISE 18.2

1. Compute AB, if

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 4 & 5 & 6 \end{bmatrix} \text{ and } B = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 5 & 3 \\ 3 & 6 & 4 \\ 4 & 7 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$$

Ans. $\begin{bmatrix} 20 & 38 & 26 \\ 47 & 92 & 62 \end{bmatrix}$

2. If A = $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 0 \\ -1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$, $B = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ -1 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$. From the product AB and BA. Show that $AB \neq BA$.

3. If $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$, $B = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

(*i*) Calculate AB and BA. Hence evaluate $A^2 B + B^2 A$

(*ii*) Show that for any number k, $(A + kB^2)^3 = KI$, where I is the unit matrix.

4. If $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ choose α and β so that $(\alpha I + \beta A)^2 = A$ **Ans.** $\alpha = \beta = \pm\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}$

5. Write the following transformation in matrix form :

$$x_1 = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} y_1 + \frac{1}{2} y_2 \;;\; x_2 = -\frac{1}{2} y_1 + \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} y_2$$

Hence, find the transformation in matrix form which expresses y_1, y_2 in terms of x_1, x_2.

Ans. $y_1 = \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} x_1 - \frac{1}{2} x_2 , y_2 = \frac{1}{2} x_1 + \frac{\sqrt{3}}{2} x_2$

6. If $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & -\tan\frac{\alpha}{2} \\ \tan\frac{\alpha}{2} & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ and I is a unit matrix, show that $I + A = (I - A)\begin{bmatrix} \cos\alpha & -\sin\alpha \\ \sin\alpha & \cos\alpha \end{bmatrix}$

7. If $f(x) = x^3 - 20x + 8$, find $f(A)$ where $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 1 & 3 & -3 \\ -2 & -4 & -4 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 0

8. Show that $\begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta & -\sin\theta \\ \sin\theta & \cos\theta \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -\tan\frac{\theta}{2} \\ \tan\frac{\theta}{2} & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & \tan\frac{\theta}{2} \\ -\tan\frac{\theta}{2} & 1 \end{bmatrix}^{-1}$

9. If A = $\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -3 & 4 \\ 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ then show that $A^3 = A^{-1}$.

10. Verify whether the matrix $A = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & -1 & 2 \\ -1 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ is orthogonal.

11. Show that $\begin{bmatrix} \cos\phi & 0 & \sin\phi \\ \sin\theta\sin\phi & \cos\theta & -\sin\theta\cos\phi \\ -\cos\theta\sin\phi & \sin\theta & \cos\theta\cos\phi \end{bmatrix}$ is an orthogonal matrix.

12. Show that A = $\begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta & 0 & \sin\theta \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ -\sin\theta & 0 & \cos\theta \end{bmatrix}$ is an orthogonal matrix. (*A.M.I.E., Summer 2004*)

13. If A and B are square matrices of the same order, explain in general

(*i*) $(A + B)^2 \neq A^2 + 2AB + B^2$ (*ii*) $(A - B)^2 \neq A^2 - 2AB + B^2$ (*iii*) $(A + B)(A - B) \neq A^2 - B^2$

18.10 ADJOINT OF A SQUARE MATRIX

Let the determinant of the square matrix A be $|A|$.

If $A = \begin{bmatrix} a_1 & a_2 & a_3 \\ b_1 & b_2 & b_3 \\ c_1 & c_2 & c_3 \end{bmatrix}$, Than $|A| = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & a_2 & a_3 \\ b_1 & b_2 & b_3 \\ c_1 & c_2 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$.

The matrix formed by the co-factors of the elements in

$$|A| \text{ is } \begin{bmatrix} A_1 & A_2 & A_3 \\ B_1 & B_2 & B_3 \\ C_1 & C_2 & C_3 \end{bmatrix}.$$

where $A_1 = \begin{vmatrix} b_2 & b_3 \\ c_2 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} = b_2c_3 - b_3c_2,$ $\quad A_2 = -\begin{vmatrix} b_1 & b_3 \\ c_1 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} = -b_1c_3 + b_3c_1$

$$A_3 = \begin{vmatrix} b_1 & b_2 \\ c_1 & c_2 \end{vmatrix} = b_1c_2 - b_2c_1, \qquad B_1 = -\begin{vmatrix} a_2 & a_3 \\ c_2 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} = -a_2c_3 + a_3c_2$$

$$B_2 = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & a_3 \\ c_1 & c_3 \end{vmatrix} = a_1c_3 - a_3c_1, \qquad B_3 = -\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & a_2 \\ c_1 & c_2 \end{vmatrix} = -a_1c_2 + a_2c_1$$

$$C_1 = \begin{vmatrix} a_2 & a_3 \\ b_2 & b_3 \end{vmatrix} = a_2b_3 - a_3b_2, \qquad C_2 = -\begin{vmatrix} a_1 & a_3 \\ b_1 & b_3 \end{vmatrix} = -a_1b_3 + a_3b_1$$

$$C_3 = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & a_2 \\ b_1 & b_2 \end{vmatrix} = a_1b_2 - a_2b_1$$

Then the transpose of the matrix of co-factors

$$\begin{bmatrix} A_1 & B_1 & C_1 \\ A_2 & B_2 & C_2 \\ A_3 & B_3 & C_3 \end{bmatrix}$$

is called the adjoint of the matrix A and is written as adj A.

18.11 MATHEMATICAL INDUCTION

By mathematical induction we can prove results for all positive integers. If the result to be proved for the positive integer n then we apply the following method.

Working Rule:

Step 1. Verify the result for $n = 1$

Step 2. Assume the result to be true for $n = k$ and then prove that it is true for $n = k + 1$.

Explanation. By step 1, the result is true for $n = k = 1$

By step 2, the result is true for $n = k + 1 = 1 + 1 = 2$ $\quad (k = 1)$

Again, the result is also true for $n = k + 1 = 2 + 1 = 3$ $\quad (k = 2)$

Similarly, the result is also true for $n = k + 1 = 3 + 1 = 4$ $\quad (k = 3)$

Hence, in this way the result is true for all positive integer n.

Example 16. *By mathematical induction,*

$$\text{if } A = \begin{bmatrix} \cos\alpha & \sin\alpha \\ -\sin\alpha & \cos\alpha \end{bmatrix}, \text{ show that } A^n = \begin{bmatrix} \cos n\alpha & \sin n\alpha \\ -\sin n\alpha & \cos n\alpha \end{bmatrix}$$

Where n is a positive integer.

Solution. We prove the result by mathematical induction :

$$A^n = \begin{bmatrix} \cos n\alpha & \sin n\alpha \\ -\sin n\alpha & \cos n\alpha \end{bmatrix}$$

Let us verify the result for $n = 1$.

$$A^1 = \begin{bmatrix} \cos 1\alpha & \sin 1\alpha \\ -\sin 1\alpha & \cos 1\alpha \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \cos\alpha & \sin\alpha \\ -\sin\alpha & \cos\alpha \end{bmatrix} = A \qquad \text{[Given]}$$

The result is true when $n = 1$.

Let us assume that the result is true for any positive integer k.

$$A^k = \begin{bmatrix} \cos k\alpha & \sin k\alpha \\ -\sin k\alpha & \cos k\alpha \end{bmatrix}$$

Now, $$A^{k+1} = A^k . A = \begin{bmatrix} \cos k\alpha & \sin k\alpha \\ -\sin k\alpha & \cos k\alpha \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} \cos\alpha & \sin\alpha \\ -\sin\alpha & \cos\alpha \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} \cos k\alpha\cos\alpha - \sin k\alpha\sin\alpha & \cos k\alpha\sin\alpha + \sin k\alpha\cos\alpha \\ -\sin k\alpha\cos\alpha - \cos k\alpha\sin\alpha & -\sin k\alpha\sin\alpha + \cos k\alpha\cos\alpha \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} \cos(k\alpha+\alpha) & \sin(k\alpha+\alpha) \\ -\sin(k\alpha+\alpha) & \cos(k\alpha+\alpha) \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \cos(k+1)\alpha & \sin(k+1)\alpha \\ -\sin(k+1)\alpha & \cos(k+1)\alpha \end{bmatrix}$$

The result is true for $n = k + 1$.

Hence, by mathematical induction the result is true for all positive integer n. **Proved.**

Example 17. *Factorise the matrix* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 5 & -2 & 1 \\ 7 & 1 & -5 \\ 3 & 7 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$ *into the form LU, where L is lower triangular and U is upper triangular matrix.*

Solution. Let $A = LU$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 5 & -2 & 1 \\ 7 & 1 & -5 \\ 3 & 7 & 4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} l_{11} & 0 & 0 \\ l_{21} & l_{22} & 0 \\ l_{31} & l_{32} & l_{33} \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & u_{12} & u_{13} \\ 0 & 1 & u_{23} \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \ldots (1)$$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 5 & -2 & 1 \\ 7 & 1 & -5 \\ 3 & 7 & 4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} l_{11} & l_{11}u_{12} & l_{11}u_{13} \\ l_{21} & l_{21}u_{12}+l_{22} & l_{21}u_{13}+l_{22}u_{23} \\ l_{31} & l_{31}u_{12}+l_{32} & l_{31}u_{13}+l_{32}u_{23}+l_{33} \end{bmatrix}$$

Equating the corresponding elements of equal matrices, we get

$\Rightarrow$ $l_{11} = 5$ $\qquad l_{11}u_{12} = -2$ $\qquad l_{11}u_{13} = 1$

$l_{21} = 7$ $\qquad l_{21}u_{12} + l_{22} = 1$ $\qquad l_{21}u_{13} + l_{22}u_{23} = -5$

$l_{31} = 3$ $\qquad l_{31}u_{12} + l_{32} = 7$ $\qquad l_{31}u_{13} + l_{32}u_{23} + l_{33} = 4$

Let us solve the above equations along first column.

$l_{11} = 5$

$l_{21} = 7$

$l_{31} = 3$

Let us solve along first row.

$l_{11}u_{12} = -2 \qquad \Rightarrow 5\,u_{12} = -2 \qquad \Rightarrow u_{12} = -\dfrac{2}{5}$

$l_{11}u_{13} = 1 \qquad \Rightarrow 5\,u_{13} = 1 \qquad \Rightarrow u_{13} = \dfrac{1}{5}$

Let us solve along second column.

$$l_{21}\,u_{12} + l_{22} = 1 \quad \Rightarrow 7\left(-\frac{2}{5}\right) + l_{22} = 1 \quad \Rightarrow l_{22} = 1 + \frac{14}{5} = \frac{19}{5}$$

$$l_{31}\,u_{12} + l_{32} = 7 \quad \Rightarrow 3\left(-\frac{2}{5}\right) + l_{32} = 7 \quad \Rightarrow l_{32} = 7 + \frac{6}{5} = \frac{41}{5}$$

Let us solve along second row,

$$l_{21}u_{13} + l_{22}u_{23} = -5 \qquad \Rightarrow 7\left(\frac{1}{5}\right) + \frac{19}{5}u_{23} = -5 \qquad \Rightarrow u_{23} = \left(-5 - \frac{7}{5}\right)\frac{5}{19} = -\frac{32}{19}$$

Let us solve along third column,

$$l_{31}u_{13} + l_{32}u_{23} + l_{33} = 4 \Rightarrow 3\left(\frac{1}{5}\right) + \left(\frac{41}{5}\right)\left(-\frac{32}{19}\right) + l_{33} = 4 \Rightarrow l_{33} = 4 - \frac{3}{5} + \frac{1312}{95} = \frac{327}{19}$$

Putting the values of $l_{11}, l_{21}, l_{22}, l_{31}, l_{32}, l_{33}, u_{12}, u_{13}, u_{23}$ in (1), we get

$$\begin{bmatrix} 5 & -2 & 1 \\ 7 & 1 & -5 \\ 3 & 7 & 4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 5 & 0 & 0 \\ 7 & \frac{19}{5} & 0 \\ 3 & \frac{41}{5} & \frac{327}{19} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -\frac{2}{5} & \frac{1}{5} \\ 0 & 1 & -\frac{32}{19} \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Ans.

18.12 PROPERTY OF ADJOINT MATRIX

The product of a matrix A and its adjoint is equal to unit matrix multiplied by the determinant A.

Proof. If A be a square matrix, then (Adjoint A) $\cdot A = A \cdot$ (Adjoint A) $= |A| \cdot I$

Let
$$A = \begin{bmatrix} a_1 & a_2 & a_3 \\ b_1 & b_2 & b_3 \\ c_1 & c_2 & c_3 \end{bmatrix} \text{ and adj}\,.\,A = \begin{bmatrix} A_1 & B_1 & C_1 \\ A_2 & B_2 & C_2 \\ A_3 & B_3 & C_3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A\,.\,(\text{adj}.\,A) = \begin{bmatrix} a_1 & a_2 & a_3 \\ b_1 & b_2 & b_3 \\ c_1 & c_2 & c_3 \end{bmatrix} \times \begin{bmatrix} A_1 & B_1 & C_1 \\ A_2 & B_2 & C_2 \\ A_3 & B_3 & C_3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} a_1 A_1 + a_2 A_2 + a_3 A_3 & a_1 B_1 + a_2 B_2 + a_3 B_3 & a_1 C_1 + a_2 C_2 + a_3 C_3 \\ b_1 A_1 + b_2 A_2 + b_3 A_3 & b_1 B_1 + b_2 B_2 + b_3 B_3 & b_1 C_1 + b_2 C_2 + b_3 C_3 \\ c_1 A_1 + c_2 A_2 + c_3 A_3 & c_1 B_1 + c_2 B_2 + c_3 B_3 & c_1 C_1 + c_2 C_2 + c_3 C_3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} |A| & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & |A| & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & |A| \end{bmatrix} = |A| \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = |A|\,I$$

(*A.M.I.E., Summer 2004*)

18.13 INVERSE OF A MATRIX

If A and B are two square matrices of the same order, such that

$$AB = BA = I \qquad (I = \text{unit matrix})$$

then B is called the inverse of A *i.e.* $B = A^{-1}$ and A is the inverse of B.

Condition for a square matrix A to possess an inverse is that matrix A is non-singular, i.e., $|A| \neq 0$

If A is a square matrix and B be its inverse, then $AB = I$

Taking determinant of both sides, we get

$$|AB| = |I| \text{ or } |A||B| = I$$

From this relation it is clear that $|A| \neq 0$

i.e. the matrix A is non-singular.

To find the inverse matrix with the help of adjoint matrix

We know that $A \cdot (Adj.\, A) = |A|\, I$

$$\Rightarrow \quad A \cdot \frac{1}{|A|}(Adj.\, A) = I \qquad \text{[Provided } |A| \neq 0] \qquad ...(1)$$

and

$$A \cdot A^{-1} = I \qquad ...(2)$$

From (1) and (2), we have

$$\therefore \quad \boxed{A^{-1} = \frac{1}{|A|}(Adj.\, A)}$$

Example 18. *If* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -3 & 4 \\ 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$, *find* A^{-1}. (*A.M.I.E. Summer 2004*)

Solution. $A = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -3 & 4 \\ 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

$$|A| = 3(-3+4) + 3(2-0) + 4(-2-0) = 3 + 6 - 8 = 1$$

The co-factors of elements of various rows of $|A|$ are

$$\begin{bmatrix} (-3+4) & (-2-0) & (-2-0) \\ (3-4) & (3-0) & (3-0) \\ (-12+12) & (-12+8) & (-9+6) \end{bmatrix}$$

Therefore, the matrix formed by the co-factors of $|A|$ is

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & -2 \\ -1 & 3 & 3 \\ 0 & -4 & -3 \end{bmatrix}, \quad Adj.\, A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ -2 & 3 & -4 \\ -2 & 3 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\therefore \quad A^{-1} = \frac{1}{|A|} Adj.\, A = \frac{1}{1}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ -2 & 3 & -4 \\ -2 & 3 & -3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ -2 & 3 & -4 \\ -2 & 3 & -3 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \textbf{Ans.}$$

Example 19. *If* $A = \frac{1}{9}\begin{bmatrix} -8 & 1 & 4 \\ 4 & 4 & 7 \\ 1 & -8 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$, *prove that* $A^{-1} = A'$, A' *being the transpose of* A.

(*A.M.I.E., Winter 2000*)

Solution. We have,

$$A = \frac{1}{9}\begin{bmatrix} -8 & 1 & 4 \\ 4 & 4 & 7 \\ 1 & -8 & 4 \end{bmatrix}, \quad A' = \frac{1}{9}\begin{bmatrix} -8 & 4 & 1 \\ 1 & 4 & -8 \\ 4 & 7 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AA' = \frac{1}{9}\begin{bmatrix} -8 & 1 & 4 \\ 4 & 4 & 7 \\ 1 & -8 & 4 \end{bmatrix} \cdot \frac{1}{9}\begin{bmatrix} -8 & 4 & 1 \\ 1 & 4 & -8 \\ 4 & 7 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \frac{1}{81}\begin{bmatrix} 64+1+16 & -32+4+28 & -8-8+16 \\ -32+4+28 & 16+16+49 & 4-32+28 \\ -8-8+16 & 4-32+28 & 1+64+16 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \frac{1}{81}\begin{bmatrix} 81 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 81 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 81 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \text{ or } AA' = I$$

$$A' = A^{-1}$$ **Proved.**

Example 20. *If A and B are non-singular matrices of the same order then,*

$$(AB)^{-1} = B^{-1} \cdot A^{-1}$$

Hence prove that $(A^{-1})^m = (A^m)^{-1}$ for any positive integer m.

Solution. We know that,

$$(AB) \cdot (B^{-1} A^{-1}) = [(AB) B^{-1}] \cdot A^{-1} = [A (BB^{-1}] \cdot A^{-1}$$

$$= [AI] A^{-1} = A \cdot A^{-1} = I$$

Also, $$B^{-1} A^{-1} \cdot (AB) = B^{-1}[A^{-1} \cdot (AB)] = B^{-1} [(A^{-1} A) \cdot B]$$

$$= B^{-1} [I \,.\, B] = \mathrm{B}^{-1} \cdot B = I$$

By definition of the inverse of a matrix, $B^{-1} A^{-1}$ is inverse of AB.

$\Rightarrow$ $$B^{-1} A^{-1} = (AB)^{-1}$$ **Proved.**

$$(A^m)^{-1} = [A \cdot A^{m-1}]^{-1} = (A^{m-1})^{-1} A^{-1}$$

$$= (A \cdot A^{m-2})^{-1} \cdot A^{-1} = [(A^{m-2})^{-1} \cdot A^{-1}] \cdot A^{-1} = (A^{m-2})^{-1} (A^{-1})^2$$

$$= (A \cdot A^{m-3})^{-1} \cdot (A^{-1})^2 = [(A^{m-3})^{-1} \cdot A^{-1}] (A^{-1})^2 = (A^{m-3})^{-1} (A^{-1})^3$$

$$= A^{-1} (A^{-1})^{m-1} = (A^{-1})^m$$ **Proved.**

Example 21. *Find A satisfying the Matrix equation.*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ 3 & 2 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 2 \\ 5 & -3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -2 & 4 \\ 3 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Solution. $$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ 3 & 2 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 2 \\ 5 & -3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -2 & 4 \\ 3 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Both sides of the equation are pre-multiplied by the inverse of $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ 3 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ *i.e.,* $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -1 \\ -3 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -1 \\ -3 & 2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ 3 & 2 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 2 \\ 5 & -3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & -1 \\ -3 & 2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} -2 & 4 \\ 3 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 2 \\ 5 & -3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -7 & 9 \\ 12 & -14 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 2 \\ 5 & -3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -7 & 9 \\ 12 & -14 \end{bmatrix}$$

Again both sides are post-multiplied by the inverse of $\begin{bmatrix} -3 & 2 \\ 5 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$ *i.e.* $\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 2 \\ 5 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$

$$A \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 2 \\ 5 & -3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 2 \\ 5 & 3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -7 & 9 \\ 12 & -14 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 2 \\ 5 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 24 & 13 \\ -34 & -18 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow A = \begin{bmatrix} 24 & 13 \\ -34 & -18 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 18.3

Find the adjoint and inverse of the following matrices: (1 - 3)

1. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 5 & 3 \\ 3 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\frac{1}{4}\begin{bmatrix} -3 & 1 & 7 \\ -1 & -1 & 5 \\ 5 & 1 & -13 \end{bmatrix}$ **2.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 9 & 3 \\ 1 & 4 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $-\frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 6 & 6 & -15 \\ 1 & 0 & -1 \\ -5 & -3 & 8 \end{bmatrix}$

3. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 3 & 4 & 5 \\ 0 & -6 & -7 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\frac{1}{20}\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 6 & 4 \\ 21 & -7 & -8 \\ -18 & 6 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$

4. If $A=\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -4 \\ 1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$, then show that $A^n=\begin{bmatrix} 1+2n & -4n \\ n & 1-2n \end{bmatrix}$

5. If $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -2 \\ -1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}, P = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 0 & 3 & 2 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$, show that $P^{-1}AP = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

6. If $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 1 & 4 & 9 \end{bmatrix}, B = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 5 & 3 \\ 3 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$, show that $(AB)^{-1} = B^{-1}A^{-1}$.

7. Given the matrix $A = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 2 & 2 \\ 1 & 3 & 1 \\ 5 & 3 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$ compute det (A), A^{-1} and the matrix B such that $AB = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 4 & 2 \\ 1 & 6 & 1 \\ 5 & 6 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$

Also compute BA. Is $AB = BA$?

Ans. $5, \frac{1}{5}\begin{bmatrix} 9 & -2 & -4 \\ 1 & 2 & -1 \\ -12 & 1 & 7 \end{bmatrix}. B = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}, AB \neq BA$

8. Find the condition of k such that the matrix

$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 4 \\ 3 & k & 6 \\ -1 & 5 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ has an inverse. Obtain A^{-1} for $k = 1$. **Ans.** $k \neq -\frac{3}{5}, A^{-1} = \frac{1}{8}\begin{bmatrix} -29 & 17 & 14 \\ -9 & 5 & 6 \\ 16 & -8 & -8 \end{bmatrix}$

9. Prove that $(A^{-1})^T = (A^T)^{-1}$.

10. If $A\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ where $A = \begin{bmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{bmatrix}$, then A is

(*a*) $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ (*b*) $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$ (*c*) $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ (*d*) $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ -\frac{1}{2} & -\frac{1}{2} \end{bmatrix}$ (*AMIETE, June 2010*) **Ans.** (*d*)

18.14 ELEMENTARY TRANSFORMATIONS

Any one of the following operations on a matrix is called an elementary transformation.

1. Interchanging any two rows (or columns). This transformation is indicated by R_{ij}, if the ith and jth rows are interchanged.
2. Multiplication of the elements of any row R_i (or column) by a non-zero scalar quantity k is denoted by $(k.R_i)$.
3. Addition of constant multiplication of the elements of any row R_j to the corresponding elements of any other row R_j is denoted by $(R_i + kR_j)$.

If a matrix B is obtained from a matrix A by one or more E-operations, then B is said to be equivalent to A. The symbol ~ is used for equivalence.

$$i.e., A \sim B.$$

Example 22. *Reduce the following matrix to upper triangular form (Echelon form) :*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 2 & 5 & 7 \\ 3 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$$

Solution. *Upper triangular matrix.* If in a square matrix, all the elements below the principal diagonal are zero, the matrix is called an upper triangular matrix.

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 2 & 5 & 7 \\ 3 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & -5 & -7 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_1 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 + 5R_2$$ **Ans.**

Example 23. *Transform* $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 3 \\ 2 & 4 & 10 \\ 3 & 8 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$ *into a unit matrix.* (*Q. Bank U.P., 2001*)

Solution.
$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 3 \\ 2 & 4 & 10 \\ 3 & 8 & 4 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 3 \\ 0 & -2 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & -5 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & -2 \\ 0 & -1 & -5 \end{bmatrix} R_2 \to -\frac{1}{2}R_2 \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 9 \\ 0 & 1 & -2 \\ 0 & 0 & -7 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_1 \to R_1 - 3R_2 \\ \\ R_3 \to R_3 + R_2 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 9 \\ 0 & 1 & -2 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to -\frac{1}{7}R_3 \quad \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_1 \to R_1 - 9R_3 \\ R_2 \to R_2 + 2R_3 \\ \\ \end{matrix}$$

18.15 ELEMENTARY MATRICES

A matrix obtained from a unit matrix by a single elementary transformation is called elementary matrix.

$$I = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Consider the matrix obtained by $R_2 + 3R_1$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 3 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$ is called the elementary matrix.

18.16 THEOREM

Every elementary row transformation of a matrix can be affected by pre-multiplication with the corresponding elementary matrix.

Consider the matrix $$A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 5 & 6 & 7 \\ 3 & 5 & 9 \end{bmatrix}$$

Let us apply row transformation $R_3 + 4R_1$ and we get a matrix B.

$$B = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 5 & 6 & 7 \\ 11 & 17 & 25 \end{bmatrix}$$

Now we shall show that pre-multiplication of A by corresponding elementary matrix $R_3 + 4R_1$ will give us B.

Now, if $I = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ then, Elementary matrix $= \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 4 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}_{(R_3 + 4R_1)}$

$$\therefore \quad \text{Elementary matrix} \times A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 4 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \times \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 5 & 6 & 7 \\ 3 & 5 & 9 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 5 & 6 & 7 \\ 11 & 17 & 25 \end{bmatrix} = B$$

Similarly, we can show that every elementary column transformation of a matrix can be affected by post-multiplication with the corresponding elementary matrix.

18.17 TO COMPUTE THE INVERSE OF A MATRIX FROM ELEMENTARY MATRICES (Gauss-jordan Method)

If A is reduced to I by elementary transformation then

$$PA = I \qquad \text{where} \qquad P = P_n P_{n-1} \dots P_2 P_1$$

$$\therefore \qquad P = A^{-1} \qquad\qquad = \text{Elementary matrix.}$$

Working rule. Write $A = IA$. Perform elementary row transformation on A of the left side and on I of the right hand side so that A is reduced to I and I of right hand side is reduced to P getting $I = PA$.

Then P is the inverse of A.

18.18 THE INVERSE OF A SYMMETRIC MATRIX

The elementary transformations are to be transformed so that the property of being symmetric is preserved. This requires that the transformations occur in pairs, a row transformation must be followed immediately by the same column transformation.

Example 24. *Find the inverse of the following matrix employing elementary transformations*:

$$\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -3 & 4 \\ 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \textit{(U.P., I Semester, Compartment 2002)}$$

Solution. The given matrix is $A = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -3 & 4 \\ 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -3 & 4 \\ 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & \frac{4}{3} \\ 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{3} & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_1 \to \frac{R_1}{3}$$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & \frac{4}{3} \\ 0 & -1 & \frac{4}{3} \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{3} & 0 & 0 \\ -\frac{2}{3} & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1 \qquad \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & \frac{4}{3} \\ 0 & 1 & -\frac{4}{3} \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{3} & 0 & 0 \\ \frac{2}{3} & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_2 \to -R_2$$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & \frac{4}{3} \\ 0 & 1 & -\frac{4}{3} \\ 0 & 0 & -\frac{1}{3} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{3} & 0 & 0 \\ \frac{2}{3} & -1 & 0 \\ \frac{2}{3} & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_3 \to R_3 + R_2 \qquad \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & \frac{4}{3} \\ 0 & 1 & -\frac{4}{3} \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{3} & 0 & 0 \\ \frac{2}{3} & -1 & 0 \\ -2 & 3 & -3 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_3 \to -3R_3$$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -4 & 4 \\ -2 & 3 & -4 \\ -2 & 3 & -3 \end{bmatrix} A \quad \begin{matrix} R_1 \to R_1 - \frac{4}{3}R_3 \\ R_2 \to R_2 + \frac{4}{3}R_3 \end{matrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ -2 & 3 & -4 \\ -2 & 3 & -3 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_1 \to R_1 + R_2$$

Hence, $$A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ -2 & 3 & -4 \\ -2 & 3 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

Example 25. *Find by elementary row transformation the inverse of the matrix.*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 3 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$ (*U.P., I Semester, Winter 2003, 2000*)

Solution. Let $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 3 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

Elementary row transformation, which will reduce $A = IA$ to $I = PA$, then matrix P will be the inverse of matrix A.

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 3 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \qquad \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 3 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_1 \leftrightarrow R_2$$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 0 & -5 & -8 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -3 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_1 \qquad \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 & 2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 5 & -3 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_3 \to R_3 + 5R_2$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \\ \frac{5}{2} & -\frac{3}{2} & \frac{1}{2} \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_3 \to \frac{1}{2} R_3 \qquad \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -\frac{15}{2} & \frac{11}{2} & -\frac{3}{2} \\ -4 & 3 & -1 \\ \frac{5}{2} & -\frac{3}{2} & \frac{1}{2} \end{bmatrix} A \quad \begin{matrix} R_1 \to R_1 - 3R_3 \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_3, \end{matrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{2} & -\frac{1}{2} & \frac{1}{2} \\ -4 & 3 & -1 \\ \frac{5}{2} & -\frac{3}{2} & \frac{1}{2} \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_1 \to R_1 - 2R_2$$

$$I = PA \Rightarrow P = A^{-1}$$

$$A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{2} & -\frac{1}{2} & \frac{1}{2} \\ -4 & 3 & -1 \\ \frac{5}{2} & \frac{-3}{2} & \frac{1}{2} \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

Example 26. *Find the inverse of the matrix M by applying elementary transformations*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 2 & 1 & 3 \\ 1 & 1 & -1 & -2 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 1 & 2 & 6 \end{bmatrix}.$$ [*U.P.T.U.(C.O.) 2003*]

Solution. Here, we have $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 2 & 1 & 3 \\ 1 & 1 & -1 & -2 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 1 & 2 & 6 \end{bmatrix}$

Let $$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 2 & 1 & 3 \\ 1 & 1 & -1 & -2 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 1 & 2 & 6 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -1 & -2 \\ 0 & 2 & 1 & 3 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 1 & 2 & 6 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_1 \leftrightarrow R_2$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -1 & -2 \\ 0 & 2 & 1 & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 0 & 2 & 1 & 4 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad \begin{matrix} R_3 \to R_3 - R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 + R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -1 & -2 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 0 & 2 & 1 & 3 \\ 0 & 2 & 1 & 4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_3 \leftrightarrow R_2$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -1 & -2 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & -3 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & -2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 2 & -2 & 0 \\ 0 & 3 & -2 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad \begin{array}{l} R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - 2R_2 \end{array}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -1 & -2 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & -3 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 2 & -2 & 0 \\ -1 & 1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_4 \to R_4 - R_3$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -1 & -2 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 & 0 \\ -1 & -2 & 2 & 0 \\ -1 & 1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_3 \to -R_3$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -2 & 3 & 0 & 2 \\ 3 & -4 & 1 & -3 \\ 2 & -5 & 2 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad \begin{array}{l} R_1 \to R_1 + 2R_4 \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 3R_4 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_4 \end{array}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & -2 & 2 & -1 \\ 1 & 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 2 & -5 & 2 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad \begin{array}{l} R_1 \to R_1 + R_3 \\ R_2 \to R_2 - R_3 \end{array}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & -3 & 3 & -1 \\ 1 & 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 2 & -5 & 2 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \quad R_1 \to R_1 - R_2$$

$$I = A^{-1} A$$

Hence,
$$A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & -3 & 3 & -1 \\ 1 & 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 2 & -5 & 2 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 18.4

Reduce the matrices to triangular form:

1. $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 2 & 5 & 7 \\ 3 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 \end{bmatrix}$

2. $\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 1 & 4 \\ 1 & 2 & -5 \\ 0 & 1 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & 5 & -19 \\ 0 & 0 & 22 \end{bmatrix}$

Find the inverse of the following matrices:

3. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 3 \\ 1 & 4 & 3 \\ 1 & 3 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 7 & -3 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 & 0 \\ -1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

4. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 1 \\ 4 & 1 & 0 \\ 8 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 \\ -4 & -7 & 4 \\ -4 & -9 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$

5. Use elementary row operations to find inverse of $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 1 & 3 & -3 \\ -2 & -4 & -4 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\frac{1}{4}\begin{bmatrix} 12 & 4 & 6 \\ -5 & -1 & -3 \\ -1 & -1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$

(*AMIETE, June 2010*)

6. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & -1 & 2 \\ 1 & 3 & 2 & -3 \\ -1 & 2 & 1 & -1 \\ 2 & -3 & -1 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\frac{1}{18}\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 5 & -7 & 1 \\ 5 & -1 & 5 & -2 \\ -7 & 5 & 11 & 10 \\ 1 & -2 & 10 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$

7. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & 3 & 2 \\ 2 & 4 & 3 & 3 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ (*Q. Bank U.P. II Semester 2001*) **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & -2 & 2 & -3 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 & 1 \\ -2 & 3 & -2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$

8. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & -1 & 2 \\ 1 & 3 & 2 & -3 \\ -1 & 2 & 1 & -1 \\ 2 & -3 & -1 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\frac{1}{18}\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 5 & -7 & 1 \\ 5 & -1 & 5 & -2 \\ -7 & 5 & 11 & 10 \\ 1 & -2 & 10 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$

9. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -6 & -2 & -3 \\ 5 & -13 & -4 & -7 \\ -1 & 4 & 1 & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} -2 & 1 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 2 & -1 \\ -4 & 1 & -3 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 & -2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$

10. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 3 & 2 & 1 \\ 1 & 4 & 3 & 3 & -1 \\ 1 & 3 & 4 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 & -1 \\ 1 & -2 & -1 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\frac{1}{15}\begin{bmatrix} 30 & -20 & -15 & 25 & -5 \\ 30 & -11 & -18 & 7 & -8 \\ -30 & 12 & 21 & -9 & 6 \\ -15 & 12 & 6 & -9 & 6 \\ 15 & -7 & -6 & -1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$

11. If X, Y are non-singular matrices and $B = \begin{bmatrix} X & O \\ O & Y \end{bmatrix}$, show that $B^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} X^{-1} & O \\ O & Y^{-1} \end{bmatrix}$ where O is a null matrix.

CHAPTER

19

RANK OF MATRIX

19.1 RANK OF A MATRIX

The rank of a matrix is said to be r if

(a) It has at least one non-zero minor of order r.

(b) Every minor of A of order higher than r is zero.

Note: (i) Non-zero row is that row in which all the elements are not zero.

(ii) The rank of the product matrix AB of two matrices A and B is less than the rank of either of the matrices A and B.

(iii) Corresponding to every matrix A of rank r, there exist non-singular matrices P and Q such that $$PAQ = \begin{bmatrix} I_r & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

19.2 NORMAL FORM (CANONICAL FORM)

By performing elementary transformation, any non-zero matrix A can be reduced to one of the following four forms, called the Normal form of A :

(i) I_r (ii) $[I_r \ 0]$ (iii) $\begin{bmatrix} I_r \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$ (iv) $\begin{bmatrix} I_r & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

The number r so obtained is called the rank of A and we write $\rho(A) = r$. The form $\begin{bmatrix} I_r & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ is called first canonical form of A. Since both row and column transformations may be used here, the element 1 of the first row obtained can be moved in the first column. Then both the first row and first column can be cleared of other non-zero elements. Similarly, the element 1 of the second row can be brought into the second column, and so on.

Example 1. *Find the rank of the following matrix by reducing it to normal form –*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 & 3 \\ 4 & 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 3 & -1 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$ (*U.P. I Sem., Com. 2002, Winter 2001*)

Solution. $$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 & 3 \\ 4 & 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 3 & -1 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 & 3 \\ 0 & -7 & 6 & -11 \\ 0 & -7 & 4 & -7 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & -2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 4R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -7 & 6 & -11 \\ 0 & -7 & 4 & -7 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & -2 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -7 & 6 & -11 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 & 4 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & -2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_2 \\ \\ \end{matrix}$$

$$C_2 \to C_2 - 2\,C_1,\ C_3 \to C_3 + C_1,\ C_4 \to C_4 - 3C_1$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -7 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 & 4 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & -2 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -7 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 & 4 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} R_4 \to R_4 + \frac{1}{2} R_3$$

$$C_3 \to C_3 + \frac{6}{7}\,C_2,\ C_4 \to C_4 - \frac{11}{7}\,C_2,$$

$$C_4 \to C_4 + 2C_3 \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -7 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to -1/7\,R_2 \\ R_3 \to -1/2\,R_3 \end{matrix}$$

Rank of $A = 3$ **Ans.**

Example 2. *For which value of 'b' the rank of the matrix*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 5 & 4 \\ 0 & 3 & 2 \\ b & 13 & 10 \end{bmatrix} \text{ is } 2,$$ (*U.P., I Semester, 2008*)

Solution. Here, we have

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 5 & 4 \\ 0 & 3 & 2 \\ b & 13 & 10 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 5 & 4 \\ 0 & 3 & 2 \\ 0 & 13-5b & 10-4b \end{bmatrix} \mathrm{R}_3 \to \mathrm{R}_3 - b\mathrm{R}_1$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 3 & 2 \\ 0 & 13-5b & 10-4b \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} C_2 \to C_2 - 5C_1 \\ C_3 \to C_3 - 4C_1 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 3 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{2(2-b)}{3} \end{bmatrix} \mathrm{R}_3 \to \mathrm{R}_3 - \frac{13-5b}{3}\mathrm{R}_2$$

If rank of A is 2, than $\frac{2(2-b)}{3}$ must be zero.

i.e; $\frac{2(2-b)}{3} = 0 \quad \Rightarrow 2 - b = 0 \quad \Rightarrow b = 2$ **Ans.**

Example 3. *Reduce the matrix to normal form and find its rank.*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 & 5 \\ 3 & 4 & 5 & 6 \\ 4 & 5 & 6 & 7 \\ 9 & 10 & 11 & 12 \end{bmatrix}$$ (*R.G.P.V., Bhopal, I Sem. April 2009, 2003*)

Solution. $$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 & 5 \\ 3 & 4 & 5 & 6 \\ 4 & 5 & 6 & 7 \\ 9 & 10 & 11 & 12 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 & 5 \\ 0 & -\frac{1}{2} & -1 & \frac{-3}{2} \\ 0 & -1 & -2 & -3 \\ 0 & \frac{-7}{2} & -7 & \frac{-21}{2} \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - \frac{3}{2}R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - \frac{9}{2}R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -\frac{1}{2} & -1 & \frac{-3}{2} \\ 0 & -1 & -2 & -3 \\ 0 & \frac{-7}{2} & -7 & \frac{-21}{2} \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} C_2 \to C_2 - \frac{3}{2}C_1 \\ C_3 \to C_3 - 2C_1 \\ C_4 \to C_4 - \frac{5}{2}C_1 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_1 \to \frac{1}{2}R_1 \\ R_2 \to -2R_2 \\ R_3 \to -R_3 \\ R_4 \to \frac{-2}{7}R_4 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_3 \to R_3 - R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - R_2 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} C_3 \to C_3 - 2C_2 \\ C_4 \to C_4 - 3C_2 \end{matrix} = \begin{bmatrix} I_2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

Hence its rank = 2 **Ans.**

Example 4. *Find the rank of the matrix.*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 4 & 2 \\ 2 & -1 & 3 & 2 \\ 3 & -5 & 2 & 2 \\ 6 & -3 & 8 & 6 \end{bmatrix},$$ *by reducing it to normal form.*

(*Uttarakhand, I semester, Dec. 2006*)

Solution. We have,

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 4 & 2 \\ 2 & -1 & 3 & 2 \\ 3 & -5 & 2 & 2 \\ 6 & -3 & 8 & 6 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 4 & 2 \\ 0 & -7 & -5 & -2 \\ 0 & -14 & -10 & -4 \\ 0 & -21 & -16 & -6 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - 6R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -7 & -5 & -2 \\ 0 & -14 & -10 & -4 \\ 0 & -21 & -16 & -6 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} C_2 \to C_2 - 3C_1 \\ C_3 \to C_3 - 4C_1 \\ C_4 \to C_4 - 2C_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -7 & -5 & -2 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - 3R_2 \end{matrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -7 & -5 & -2 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \leftrightarrow R_4$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -7 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} C_3 \to C_3 - \frac{5}{7}C_2 \\ C_4 \to C_4 - \frac{2}{7}C_2 \end{matrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to -\frac{1}{7}R_2 \\ R_3 \to -R_3 \end{matrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} I_3 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$ which is normal form.

Hence, Rank (A) = 3. **Ans.**

Example 5. *Reduce the matrix A to its normal form, when*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 & 4 \\ 2 & 4 & 3 & 4 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 \\ -1 & -2 & 6 & -7 \end{bmatrix}$$

Hence, find the rank of A. (*U.P., I Semester, Dec. 2004, Winter 2001*)

Solution. The given matrix is $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 & 4 \\ 2 & 4 & 3 & 4 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 \\ -1 & -2 & 6 & -7 \end{bmatrix}$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 & 4 \\ 0 & 0 & 5 & -4 \\ 0 & 0 & 4 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 5 & -3 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 + R_1 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 5 & -4 \\ 0 & 0 & 4 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 5 & -3 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} C_2 \to C_2 - 2C_1 \\ C_3 \to C_3 + C_1 \\ C_4 \to C_4 - 4C_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 5 & 0 & -4 \\ 0 & 4 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 5 & 0 & -3 \end{bmatrix} C_3 \leftrightarrow C_2 \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 5 & 0 & -4 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{16}{5} \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_3 \to R_3 - \frac{4}{5}R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - R_2 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 5 & -4 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{16}{5} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix} C_4 \leftrightarrow C_3 \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 5 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{16}{5} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 + \frac{5}{4}R_3 \\ \\ R_4 \to R_4 - \frac{5}{16}R_3 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to 1/5\, R_2 \\ R_3 \to 5/16\, R_3 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} I_3 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

Which is the required normal form.

And since, the non-zero rows are 3 hence, the rank of the given matrix is 3. **Ans.**

Example 6. *Find non-singular matrices P, Q so that PAQ is a normal form where*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & -3 & -6 \\ 3 & -3 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$$ (*R.G.P.V., Bhopal, April, 2010, U.P., I Sem. Winter 2002*)

and hence find its rank.

Solution. Order of A is 3×4

Total number of rows in $A = 3$; $\therefore$ Consider unit matrix I_3.

Total number of columns in $A = 4$

Hence, consider unit matrix I_4,

$$\therefore \qquad A_{3 \times 4} = I_3 A I_4$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & -3 & -6 \\ 3 & -3 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & 2 \\ 3 & -3 & 1 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & -3 & -6 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} R_1 \leftrightarrow R_3$$

$$\begin{bmatrix}1&1&1&2\\0&-6&-2&-4\\0&-1&-5&-10\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}0&0&1\\0&1&-3\\1&0&-2\end{bmatrix}A\begin{bmatrix}1&0&0&0\\0&1&0&0\\0&0&1&0\\0&0&0&1\end{bmatrix}\begin{matrix}R_2\to R_2-3R_1\\R_3\to R_3-2R_1\end{matrix}$$

$$C_2\to C_2-C_1,\ C_3\to C_3-C_1,\ C_4\to C_4-2\,C_1$$

$$\begin{bmatrix}1&0&0&0\\0&-6&-2&-4\\0&-1&-5&-10\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}0&0&1\\0&1&-3\\1&0&-2\end{bmatrix}A\begin{bmatrix}1&-1&-1&-2\\0&1&0&0\\0&0&1&0\\0&0&0&1\end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix}1&0&0&0\\0&6&2&4\\0&1&5&10\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}0&0&1\\0&-1&3\\-1&0&2\end{bmatrix}A\begin{bmatrix}1&-1&-1&-2\\0&1&0&0\\0&0&1&0\\0&0&0&1\end{bmatrix}\begin{matrix}R_2\to(-1)R_2\\R_3\to(-1)R_3\end{matrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix}1&0&0&0\\0&1&5&10\\0&6&2&4\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}0&0&1\\-1&0&2\\0&-1&3\end{bmatrix}A\begin{bmatrix}1&-1&-1&-2\\0&1&0&0\\0&0&1&0\\0&0&0&1\end{bmatrix}R_2\leftrightarrow R_3$$

$$\begin{bmatrix}1&0&0&0\\0&1&5&10\\0&0&-28&-56\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}0&0&1\\-1&0&2\\6&-1&-9\end{bmatrix}A\begin{bmatrix}1&-1&-1&-2\\0&1&0&0\\0&0&1&0\\0&0&0&1\end{bmatrix}R_3\to R_3-6R_2$$

$$C_3\to C_3-5\,C_2,\qquad C_4\to C_4-10\,C_2$$

$$\begin{bmatrix}1&0&0&0\\0&1&0&0\\0&0&-28&-56\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}0&0&1\\-1&0&2\\6&-1&-9\end{bmatrix}A\begin{bmatrix}1&-1&4&8\\0&1&-5&-10\\0&0&1&0\\0&0&0&1\end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix}1&0&0&0\\0&1&0&0\\0&0&1&2\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}0&0&1\\-1&0&2\\-\frac{6}{28}&\frac{1}{28}&\frac{9}{28}\end{bmatrix}A\begin{bmatrix}1&-1&4&8\\0&1&-5&-10\\0&0&1&0\\0&0&0&1\end{bmatrix}R_3\to-\frac{1}{28}R_3$$

$$\begin{bmatrix}1&0&0&0\\0&1&0&0\\0&0&1&0\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}0&0&1\\-1&0&2\\-\frac{6}{28}&\frac{1}{28}&\frac{9}{28}\end{bmatrix}A\begin{bmatrix}1&-1&4&0\\0&1&-5&0\\0&0&1&-2\\0&0&0&1\end{bmatrix}C_4\to C_4-2C_3$$

$$N=PAQ$$

$$P = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 & 2 \\ -\frac{3}{14} & \frac{1}{28} & \frac{9}{28} \end{bmatrix}, Q = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 4 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & -5 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & -2 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

Note. P and Q are not unique.

Normal form of the given matrix is $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

The number of non zero rows in the normal matrix = 3

Hence Rank = 3 **Ans.**

Example 7. *If* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -3 & 4 \\ 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$, *Find two non singular matrices P and Q such that PAQ = I. Hence find* A^{-1}.

Solution. $$A_{3\times 3} = I_3 A I_3$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -3 & 4 \\ 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} R_1 \to R_1 - R_2$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ -2 & 3 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_2 - 2R_1$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 3 & 4 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ -2 & 3 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} C_2 \to -C_2$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 3 & 4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ -2 & 3 & 0 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} R_2 \leftrightarrow R_3$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ -2 & 3 & -3 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_2$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ -2 & 3 & -3 \end{bmatrix} A \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} C_3 \to C_3 - C_2$$

$$I_3 = PAQ$$

$$A^{-1} = QP, \qquad A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ -2 & 3 & -3 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \begin{bmatrix} I = PAQ \\ P^{-1} = AQ \\ P^{-1}Q^{-1} = A \\ (P^{-1}Q^{-1})^{-1} = A^{-1} \\ QP = A^{-1} \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ -2 & 3 & -4 \\ -2 & 3 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

19.3 RANK OF MATRIX BY TRIANGULAR FORM

$\boxed{\text{Rank = Number of non-zero row in upper triangular matrix.}}$

Note. Non-zero row is that row which does not contain all the elements as zero.

Example 8. *Find the rank of the matrix*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 2 \\ 2 & 3 & 5 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & 4 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*U.P., I Semester, Winter 2003, 2000*)

Solution.
$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 2 \\ 2 & 3 & 5 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & 4 & 5 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 2 \\ 0 & -1 & -1 & -3 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & 3 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 2 \\ 0 & -1 & -1 & -3 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ \\ R_3 \to R_3 + R_2 \end{matrix}$$

Rank = Number of non zero rows = 2. **Ans.**

Example 9. *Find the rank of the matrix*

$$\begin{bmatrix} -1 & 2 & 3 & -2 \\ 2 & -5 & 1 & 2 \\ 3 & -8 & 5 & 2 \\ 5 & -12 & -1 & 6 \end{bmatrix}$$

Solution.
$$\begin{bmatrix} -1 & 2 & 3 & -2 \\ 2 & -5 & 1 & 2 \\ 3 & -8 & 5 & 2 \\ 5 & -12 & -1 & 6 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 2 & 3 & -2 \\ 0 & -1 & 7 & -2 \\ 0 & -2 & 14 & -4 \\ 0 & -2 & 14 & -4 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 + 2R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 + 3R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 + 5R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 2 & 3 & -2 \\ 0 & -1 & 7 & -2 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - 2R_2 \\ \\ \end{matrix}$$

Here the 4th order and 3rd order minors are zero. But a minor of second order

$$\begin{vmatrix} 3 & -2 \\ 7 & -2 \end{vmatrix} = -6 + 14 = 8 \neq 0$$

Rank = Number of non-zero rows = 2. **Ans.**

Example 10. *Find the rank of matrix*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & -2 & 4 \\ 3 & -2 & 1 & 2 \\ 3 & 2 & 3 & 4 \\ -2 & 4 & 0 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*U.P., I Semester, Dec., 2006*)

Solution. Multiplying R_1 by $\frac{1}{2}$, we get 1 as pivotal element

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & \frac{3}{2} & -1 & 2 \\ 3 & -2 & 1 & 2 \\ 3 & 2 & 3 & 4 \\ -2 & 4 & 0 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & \frac{3}{2} & -1 & 2 \\ 0 & -\frac{13}{2} & 4 & -4 \\ 0 & -\frac{5}{2} & 6 & -2 \\ 0 & 7 & -2 & 9 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 3R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 + 2R_1 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & -\frac{8}{13} & \frac{8}{13} \\ 0 & -\frac{5}{2} & 6 & -2 \\ 0 & 7 & -2 & 9 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to -\frac{2}{13} R_2 \\ C_2 \to C_2 - \frac{3}{2} C_1 \\ C_3 \to C_3 + C_1 \\ C_4 \to C_4 - 2C_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & -\frac{8}{13} & \frac{8}{13} \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{58}{13} & -\frac{6}{13} \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{30}{13} & \frac{61}{13} \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ \\ R_3 \to R_3 + \frac{5}{2} R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - 7 R_2 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{58}{13} & -\frac{6}{13} \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{30}{13} & \frac{61}{13} \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ \\ C_3 \to C_3 + \frac{8}{13} C_2 \\ C_4 \to C_4 - \frac{8}{13} C_2 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & -\frac{3}{29} \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{30}{13} & \frac{61}{13} \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to \frac{13}{58} R_3 \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & -\frac{3}{29} \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{143}{29} \end{bmatrix} R_4 \to R_4 - \frac{30}{13} R_3$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{143}{29} \end{bmatrix} C_4 \to C_4 + \frac{3}{29} C_3 \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} R_4 \to \frac{29}{143} R_4$$

$$\simeq I_4$$

Hence, the rank of the given matrix = 4 **Ans.**

Example 11. *Use elementary transformation to reduce the following matrix A to triangular from and hence find the rank of A.*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & -1 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & -2 & -4 \\ 3 & 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 6 & 3 & 0 & -7 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*R.G.P.V., Bhopal, June 2007, Winter 2003, U.P., I Semester, Dec. 2005*)

Solution. We have,

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & -1 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & -2 & -4 \\ 3 & 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 6 & 3 & 0 & -7 \end{bmatrix} \approx \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & -2 & -4 \\ 2 & 3 & -1 & -1 \\ 3 & 1 & 3 & -2 \\ 6 & 3 & 0 & -7 \end{bmatrix} R_1 \longleftrightarrow R_2$$

$$\approx \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & -2 & -4 \\ 0 & 5 & 3 & 7 \\ 0 & 4 & 9 & 10 \\ 0 & 9 & 12 & 17 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - 6R_1 \end{matrix} \approx \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & -2 & -4 \\ 0 & 5 & 3 & 7 \\ 0 & 0 & 33/5 & 22/5 \\ 0 & 0 & 33/5 & 22/5 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 4/5\, R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - 9/5\, R_2 \end{matrix}$$

$$\approx \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & -2 & -4 \\ 0 & 5 & 3 & 7 \\ 0 & 0 & 33/5 & 22/5 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} R_4 \to R_4 - R_3$$

$R(A)$ = Number of non-zero rows.

$\Rightarrow \quad R(A) = 3$ **Ans.**

Example 12. *Prove that the points (x_1, y_1), (x_2, y_2) and (x_3, y_3) are collinear if and only if the rank of the matrix* $\begin{bmatrix} x_1 & y_1 & 1 \\ x_2 & y_2 & 1 \\ x_3 & y_3 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ *is less than three.*

Solution. Necessary condition.

Since the points (x_1, y_1), (x_2, y_2) and (x_3, y_3) are collinear. Therefore, the area of the triangle formed by these points is zero.

$$\therefore \quad \frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 & y_1 & 1 \\ x_2 & y_2 & 1 \\ x_3 & y_3 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = 0 \qquad \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} x_1 & y_1 & 1 \\ x_2 & y_2 & 1 \\ x_3 & y_3 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = 0$$

$\Rightarrow$ The rank of matrix $\begin{bmatrix} x_1 & y_1 & 1 \\ x_2 & y_2 & 1 \\ x_3 & y_3 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ is less than 3.

Given, the three points are collinear and we have proved that the rank of matrix is less than 3.

Hence, the condition is necessary.

Sufficient condition.

Given : The rank of the following matrix is less than 3.

$$\text{Rank of } \begin{bmatrix} x_1 & y_1 & 1 \\ x_2 & y_2 & 1 \\ x_3 & y_3 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \le 3 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{vmatrix} x_1 & y_1 & 1 \\ x_2 & y_2 & 1 \\ x_3 & y_3 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \frac{1}{2}\begin{vmatrix} x_1 & y_1 & 1 \\ x_2 & y_2 & 1 \\ x_3 & y_3 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

Thus, the three points (x_1, y_1), (x_2, y_2) and (x_3, y_3) are collinear. Given, the rank of matrix is less than 3 and we have proved that the points are collinear.

Hence, the condition is sufficient. **Proved.**

Theorem

The rank of the product matrix AB of two matrices A and B is less than the rank of the either of the matrices A and B.

Proof. Let r_1 and r_2 be the ranks of the matrices A and B respectively.

Since r_1 is the rank of the matrix A, therefore

$$A \sim \begin{bmatrix} Ir_1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \text{... (1)}$$

Where Ir_1 is the unit matrix of order r_1 and contains r_1 rows.

Post multiplying (1) by B, we get

$$AB \sim \begin{bmatrix} Ir_1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} B$$

But $\begin{bmatrix} Ir_1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ B can have r_1 non-zero rows at the most.

Rank of AB = Rank of $\begin{bmatrix} Ir_1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} B$

Rank of AB = Rank $\begin{bmatrix} Ir_1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} B \le r_1$

Rank of $AB \le$ Rank of A

Similarly we can prove that,

Rank of $AB \le$ Rank of B. **Proved.**

EXERCISE 19.1

Find the rank of the following matrices:

1. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 2 & 4 & 7 \\ 3 & 6 & 10 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 2

2. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 3

3. $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 2 & -2 \\ 4 & 0 & 2 & 6 \\ 2 & 1 & 3 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 2

4. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 4 & 3 & -2 \\ -3 & -2 & -1 & 4 \\ 6 & -1 & 7 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 3

5. $\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 4 & 1 & 1 \\ 2 & 4 & 3 & 6 \\ -1 & -2 & 6 & 4 \\ 1 & -1 & 2 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 4

6. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 4 & 3 & -2 & 1 \\ -2 & -3 & -1 & 4 & 3 \\ -1 & 6 & 7 & 2 & 9 \\ -3 & 3 & 6 & 6 & 12 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 2

Reduce the following matrices to Echelon form and find out the rank:

7. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$, Rank = 3

8. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 0 \\ 2 & 4 & 3 & 2 \\ 3 & 2 & 1 & 3 \\ 6 & 8 & 7 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} I_3 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$, Rank = 3

9. $\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 2 & 5 & 7 & 12 \\ 1 & 1 & 2 & 3 & 5 \\ 3 & 3 & 6 & 9 & 15 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} I_2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$, Rank = 2

10. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -4 & 3 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & -2 & 1 & -4 & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 & 3 & 1 \\ 4 & -7 & 4 & -4 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} I_3 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$, Rank = 3

Using elementary transformations, reduce the following matrices to the canonical form (or row-reduced Echelon form):

11. $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 0 & 2 & 3 & 4 & 1 \\ 0 & 3 & 4 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

12. $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 4 & -12 & 8 & 9 \\ 0 & 2 & -6 & 2 & 5 \\ 0 & 1 & -3 & 6 & 4 \\ 0 & -8 & 24 & 3 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

Using elementary transformations, reduce the following matrices to the normal form:

13. $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 0 & -1 \\ 3 & 4 & 1 & 2 \\ -2 & 3 & 2 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

14. $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 3 & 4 & 1 & 2 \\ 4 & 3 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

Obtain a matrix N in the normal form equivalent to

15. $A = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 4 & 5 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 9 & 1 & -1 & 2 \\ 0 & 10 & 0 & 1 & 11 \end{bmatrix}$

Hence find non-singular matrices P and Q such that $PAQ = N$.

16. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -3 & 1 & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 3 & 4 & 1 & -2 \end{bmatrix}$

Find the rank of the following matrix by reducing it into normal form:

17. $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 2 & 5 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & -1 & 6 & 3 \\ 1 & 1 & 2 & 3 & -1 \\ 0 & 2 & 5 & 2 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 4

18. $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & 3 & 2 \\ 2 & 4 & 3 & 3 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 3

Choose the correct answer:

19. Rank of matrix $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 1 & 4 & 2 \\ 2 & 6 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$ is

(*a*) 0 (*b*) 1 (*c*) 3 (*d*) 2 (*AMIETE, June 2009*) **Ans.** (*d*)

20. For which value of 'b' the rank of the matrix $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 5 & 4 \\ 0 & 3 & 2 \\ b & 13 & 10 \end{bmatrix}$ is

(*a*) 1 (*b*) 2 (*c*) 3 (*d*) 0 (*AMIETE, Dec. 2009*) **Ans.** (*b*)

CHAPTER

20

CONSISTENCY OF LINEAR SYSTEM OF EQUATIONS AND THEIR SOLUTION
(LINEAR DEPENDENCE)

20.1 SOLUTION OF SIMULTANEOUS EQUATIONS

The matrix of the coefficients of x, y, z is reduced into Echelon form by elementary row transformations. At the end of the row transformation the value of z is calculated from the last equation and value of y and the value of x are calculated by the backward substitution.

Example 1. *Solve the following equations*

$$x - y + 2z = 3, \quad x + 2y + 3z = 5, \quad 3x - 4y - 5z = -13$$

Solution. In the matrix form, the equations are written in the following form.

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 3 & -4 & -5 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 5 \\ -13 \end{bmatrix} \text{ or } \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 2 \\ 0 & 3 & 1 \\ 0 & -1 & -11 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 2 \\ -22 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 2 \\ 0 & 3 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & -\frac{32}{3} \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 2 \\ -\frac{64}{3} \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 + \frac{1}{3}R_2$$

$$x - y + 2z = 3 \qquad ...(1)$$

$$3y + z = 2 \qquad ...(2)$$

$$\frac{-32}{3}z = \frac{-64}{3} \Rightarrow z = 2$$

Putting the value of z in (2), we get

$$3y + 2 = 2 \Rightarrow y = 0$$

Putting the value of y, z in (1), we get

$$x - 0 + 4 = 3 \Rightarrow x = -1$$

$$x = -1, y = 0, z = 2$$ **Ans.**

Example 2. *Find all the solutions of the system of equations*

$$x_1 + 2x_2 - x_3 = 1, \; 3x_1 - 2x_2 + 2x_3 = 2, \; 7x_1 - 2x_2 + 3x_3 = 5$$

Solution. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 \\ 3 & -2 & 2 \\ 7 & -2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 5 \end{bmatrix}$

$$R_2 \to R_2 - 3R_1, R_3 \to R_3 - 7R_1$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 \\ 0 & -8 & 5 \\ 0 & -16 & 10 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ -2 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 \\ 0 & -8 & 5 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_2$$

$$x_1 + 2x_2 - x_3 = 1 \qquad ...(1)$$

$$-8x_2 + 5x_3 = -1 \qquad ...(2)$$

Let $x_3 = k$

Putting $x_3 = k$ in (2), we get

$$-8x_2 + 5k = -1 \Rightarrow x_2 = \frac{1}{8}(5k+1)$$

Substituting the values of x_3, x_1 in (1), we get

$$x_1 + \frac{1}{4}(5k+1) - k = 1$$

$$\therefore \quad x_1 = 1 + k - \frac{5k}{4} - \frac{1}{4} = -\frac{k}{4} + \frac{3}{4}$$

$$\therefore \quad x_1 = -\frac{k}{4} + \frac{3}{4},\ x_2 = \frac{5k}{8} + \frac{1}{8},\ x_3 = k$$

The equations have infinite solution. **Ans.**

Example 3. *Express the following system of equations in matrix form and solve them by the elimination method (Gauss Jordan Method)*

$$2x_1 + x_2 + 2x_3 + x_4 = 6$$
$$6x_1 - 6x_2 + 6x_3 + 12x_4 = 36$$
$$4x_1 + 3x_2 + 3x_3 - 3x_4 = -1$$
$$2x_1 + 2x_2 - x_3 + x_4 = 10$$

Solution. The equations are expressed in matrix form as

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 6 & -6 & 6 & 12 \\ 4 & 3 & 3 & -3 \\ 2 & 2 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \\ x_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 6 \\ 36 \\ -1 \\ 10 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & -9 & 0 & 9 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 & -5 \\ 0 & 1 & -3 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \\ x_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 6 \\ 18 \\ -13 \\ 4 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - 3R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 & -5 \\ 0 & 1 & -3 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \\ x_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 6 \\ -2 \\ -13 \\ 4 \end{bmatrix} R_2 \to \frac{R_2}{-9}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & -4 \\ 0 & 0 & -3 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \\ x_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 6 \\ -2 \\ -11 \\ 6 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_3 \to R_3 - R_2 \\ \\ R_4 \to R_4 - R_2 \end{matrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 0 & 0 & -1 & -4 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 13 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \\ x_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 6 \\ -2 \\ -11 \\ 39 \end{bmatrix} \quad R_4 \to R_4 - 3R_3$$

$$2x_1 + x_2 + 2x_3 + x_4 = 6 \quad \text{...(1)}$$
$$x_2 - x_4 = -2 \quad \text{...(2)}$$
$$-x_3 - 4x_4 = -11 \quad \text{...(3)}$$
$$13x_4 = 39 \Rightarrow x_4 = 3$$

Putting the value of x_4 in (3), we get

$$-x_3 - 12 = -11 \Rightarrow x_3 = -1$$

Putting the value of x_4 in (2), we get

$$x_2 - 3 = -2 \Rightarrow x_2 = 1$$

Substituting the values of x_4, x_3 and x_2 in (1), we get

$$2x_1 + 1 - 2 + 3 = 6 \text{ or } 2x_1 = 4 \Rightarrow x_1 = 2$$

$\therefore$ $x_1 = 2, x_2 = 1, x_3 = -1, x_4 = 3$ **Ans.**

Example 4. *Find the general solution of the system of equations:*

$$3x_1 + 2x_3 + 2x_4 = 0$$
$$-x_1 + 7x_2 + 4x_3 + 9x_4 = 0$$
$$7x_1 - 7x_2 - 5x_4 = 0$$

Solution. The system of equations in the matrix form is expressed as

$$\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 0 & 2 & 2 \\ -1 & 7 & 4 & 9 \\ 7 & -7 & 0 & -5 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \\ x_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} -1 & 7 & 4 & 9 \\ 3 & 0 & 2 & 2 \\ 7 & -7 & 0 & -5 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \\ x_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad R_1 \leftrightarrow R_2$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} -1 & 7 & 4 & 9 \\ 0 & 21 & 14 & 29 \\ 0 & 42 & 28 & 58 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \\ x_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 + 3R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 + 7R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} -1 & 7 & 4 & 9 \\ 0 & 21 & 14 & 29 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \\ x_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_2$$

$$-x_1 + 7x_2 + 4x_3 + 9x_4 = 0 \quad \text{...(1)}$$
$$21x_2 + 14x_3 + 29x_4 = 0 \quad \text{...(2)}$$

Let $x_4 = a, x_3 = b$

From (2), $21x_2 + 14b + 29a = 0$ or $x_2 = -\dfrac{2b}{3} - \dfrac{29a}{21}$

From (1), $-x_1 + 7\left(-\dfrac{2b}{3} - \dfrac{29a}{21}\right) + 4b + 9a = 0$

$$x_1 = -\frac{2a}{3} - \frac{2b}{3}$$

$$x_1 = -\frac{2}{3}(a+b),\ x_2 = -\frac{1}{21}(29a+14b)$$

$$x_3 = b,\ x_4 = a$$ **Ans.**

20.2 TYPES OF LINEAR EQUATIONS

(1) Consistent. A system of equations is said to be *consistent,* if they have one or more solution *i.e.*

$x + 2y = 4$	$x + 2y = 4$
$3x + 2y = 2$	$3x + 6y = 12$
Unique solution	Infinite solution

(2) Inconsistent. If a system of equation has no solution, it is said to be inconsistent *i.e.*

$$x + 2y = 4$$
$$3x + 6y = 5$$

20.3 CONSISTENCY OF A SYSTEM OF LINEAR EQUATIONS

$$a_{11}x_1 + a_{12}x_2 + \ldots a_{1n}x_n = b_1$$
$$a_{21}x_1 + a_{22}x_2 + \ldots a_{2n}x_n = b_2$$
$$\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots$$
$$a_{m1}x_1 + a_{m2}x_2 + \ldots a_{mn}x_n = b_m$$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} a_{11} & a_{12} \ldots\ldots\ldots a_{1n} \\ a_{21} & a_{22} \ldots\ldots\ldots a_{2n} \\ \ldots\ldots & \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots \\ a_{m1} & a_{m2} \ldots\ldots\ldots a_{mn} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ \ldots \\ x_m \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} b_1 \\ b_2 \\ \ldots \\ b_m \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad AX = B$$

and $C = [A, B] = \begin{bmatrix} a_{11} & a_{12} \ldots\ldots\ldots a_{1n} & b_1 \\ a_{21} & a_{22} \ldots\ldots\ldots a_{2n} & b_2 \\ \ldots\ldots & \ldots\ldots\ldots\ldots & \ldots \\ a_{m1} & a_{m2} \ldots\ldots\ldots a_{mn} & b_m \end{bmatrix}$

is called the **augmented** matrix.

$$\boxed{[A : B] = C}$$

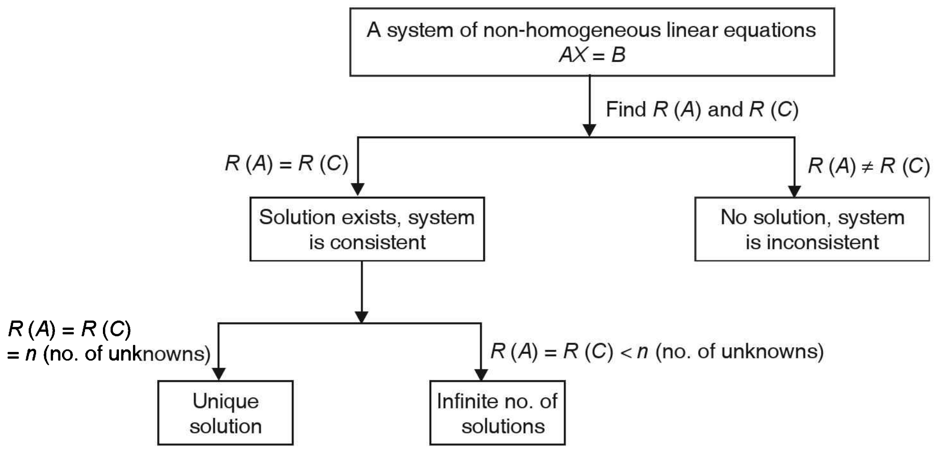
(*a*) Consistent equations. If Rank A = Rank C

(*i*) *Unique solution:* Rank A = Rank $C = n$ where n = number of unknown.

(*ii*) *Infinite solution:* Rank A = Rank $C = r$, $r < n$

(*b*) Inconsistent equations. If Rank $A \neq$ Rank C.

In Brief :



Example 5. *Show that the equations*

$$2x + 6y = -11,\ 6x + 20y - 6z = -3,\ 6y - 18z = -1$$

are not consistent.

Solution. Augmented matrix $C = [A, B]$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 6 & 0 & : & -11 \\ 6 & 20 & -6 & : & -3 \\ 0 & 6 & -18 & : & -1 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 6 & 0 & : & -11 \\ 0 & 2 & -6 & : & 30 \\ 0 & 6 & -18 & : & -1 \end{bmatrix} R_2 \to R_2 - 3R_1$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 6 & 0 & : & -11 \\ 0 & 2 & -6 & : & 30 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & : & -91 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 - 3\,R_2$$

The rank of C is 3 and the rank of A is 2.

Rank of $A \neq$ Rank of C. The equations are not consistent. **Ans.**

Example 6. *Test the consistency and hence solve the following set of equation.*

$$x_1 + 2x_2 + x_3 = 2$$
$$3x_1 + x_2 - 2x_3 = 1$$
$$4x_1 - 3x_2 - x_3 = 3$$
$$2x_1 + 4x_2 + 2x_3 = 4$$

(*U.P., I Semester, Compartment 2002*)

Solution. The given set of equations is written in the matrix form:

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 3 & 1 & -2 \\ 4 & -3 & -1 \\ 2 & 4 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ 1 \\ 3 \\ 4 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AX = B$$

Here, we have augmented matrix $C = [A : B] \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 & : & 2 \\ 3 & 1 & -2 & : & 1 \\ 4 & -3 & -1 & : & 3 \\ 2 & 4 & 2 & : & 4 \end{bmatrix}$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 & : & 2 \\ 0 & -5 & -5 & : & -5 \\ 0 & -11 & -5 & : & -5 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - 3\,R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 4\,R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - 2\,R_1 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 & : & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & : & 1 \\ 0 & -11 & -5 & : & -5 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix} R_2 \to -\frac{1}{5} R_2$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 & : & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & : & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 6 & : & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 + 11\,R_2 \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 & : & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 & : & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & : & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to \frac{1}{6} R_3$$

Number of non-zero rows = Rank of matrix.

$$\Rightarrow \qquad R(C) = R(A) = 3$$

Hence, the given system is consistent and possesses a unique solution. In matrix form the system reduces to

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ 1 \\ 1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$x_1 + 2x_2 + x_3 = 2 \qquad ...(1)$$
$$x_2 + x_3 = 1 \qquad ...(2)$$
$$x_3 = 1$$

From (2), $\quad x_2 + 1 = 1 \Rightarrow x_2 = 0$

From (1), $\quad x_1 + 0 + 1 = 2 \Rightarrow x_1 = 1$

Hence, $\quad x_1 = 1, x_2 = 0$ and $x_3 = 1$ **Ans.**

Example 7. *Test for consistency and solve :*

$$5x + 3y + 7z = 4,\ 3x + 26y + 2z = 9,\ 7x + 2y + 10z = 5$$

Solution. The augmented matrix $C = [A, B]$ (*R.G. P.V. Bhopal I. Sem. April 2009-08-03*)

$$\begin{bmatrix} 5 & 3 & 7 & : & 4 \\ 3 & 26 & 2 & : & 9 \\ 7 & 2 & 10 & : & 5 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & \frac{3}{5} & \frac{7}{5} & : & \frac{4}{5} \\ 3 & 26 & 2 & : & 9 \\ 7 & 2 & 10 & : & 5 \end{bmatrix} \quad R_1 \to \frac{1}{5} R_1$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & \frac{3}{5} & \frac{7}{5} & : & \frac{4}{5} \\ 0 & \frac{121}{5} & -\frac{11}{5} & : & \frac{33}{5} \\ 0 & -\frac{11}{5} & \frac{1}{5} & : & -\frac{3}{5} \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 3R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 7R_1 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & \frac{3}{5} & \frac{7}{5} & : & \frac{4}{5} \\ 0 & \frac{121}{5} & -\frac{11}{5} & : & \frac{33}{5} \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad R_3 \to R_3 + \frac{1}{11} R_2$$

Rank of A = 2 = Rank of C

Hence, the equations are consistent. But the rank is less than 3 *i.e.* number of unknows. So its solutions are infinite.

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & \frac{3}{5} & \frac{7}{5} \\ 0 & \frac{121}{5} & -\frac{11}{5} \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{4}{5} \\ \frac{33}{5} \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$x + \frac{3}{5} y + \frac{7}{5} z = \frac{4}{5}$$

$$\frac{121}{5} y - \frac{11z}{5} = \frac{33}{5} \quad \text{or } 11y - z = 3$$

Let $z = k$ then $\quad 11y - k = 3$ or $y = \frac{3}{11} + \frac{k}{11}$

$$x + \frac{3}{5}\left[\frac{3}{11} + \frac{k}{11}\right] + \frac{7}{5} k = \frac{4}{5} \quad \text{or } x = -\frac{16}{11} k + \frac{7}{11}$$ **Ans.**

Example 8. *Test the consistency of following system of linear equations and hence find the solution.*

$$4x_1 - x_2 = 12$$
$$-x_1 + 5x_2 - 2x_3 = 0$$
$$-2x_2 + 4x_3 = -8$$

(*U.P., I semester Dec. 2005*)

Solution. The given equation in the matrix form is

$$\begin{bmatrix} 4 & -1 & 0 \\ -1 & 5 & -2 \\ 0 & -2 & 4 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 12 \\ 0 \\ -8 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AX = B$$

where, $A = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & -1 & 0 \\ -1 & 5 & -2 \\ 0 & -2 & 4 \end{bmatrix}, X = \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix}, B = \begin{bmatrix} 12 \\ 0 \\ -8 \end{bmatrix}$

$C = [A, B]$

$$C = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & -1 & 0 & : & 12 \\ -1 & 5 & -2 & : & 0 \\ 0 & -2 & 4 & : & -8 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 5 & -2 & : & 0 \\ 4 & -1 & 0 & : & 12 \\ 0 & -2 & 4 & : & -8 \end{bmatrix} R_1 \leftrightarrow R_2$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 5 & -2 & : & 0 \\ 0 & 19 & -8 & : & 12 \\ 0 & -2 & 4 & : & -8 \end{bmatrix} R_2 \to R_2 + 4R_1$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 5 & -2 & : & 0 \\ 0 & 19 & -8 & : & 12 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{60}{19} & : & \frac{-128}{19} \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 + \frac{2}{19} R_2$$

Here, rank of A is 3 and Rank of C is also 3.

$R(A) = R(C) = 3$

Hence, the equations are consistent with unique solution.

$$\begin{bmatrix} -1 & 5 & -2 \\ 0 & 19 & -8 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{60}{19} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 12 \\ \frac{-128}{19} \end{bmatrix}$$

$-x_1 + 5x_2 - 2x_3 = 0$ ...(1)

$19x_2 - 8x_3 = 12$ ...(2)

$$\frac{60}{19} x_3 = \frac{-128}{19} \quad \Rightarrow \quad x_3 = -\frac{128}{19} \times \frac{19}{60} \quad \Rightarrow \quad x_3 = \frac{-32}{15}$$

On putting the value of x_3 in (2), we get

$$19x_2 - 8\left(\frac{-32}{15}\right) = 12 \quad \Rightarrow \quad 19x_2 = 12 - \frac{256}{15} = \frac{-76}{15}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad x_2 = \frac{-76}{15 \times 19} = -\frac{4}{15}$$

On putting the values of x_2 and x_3 in (1), we get

$$-x_1 + 5\left(-\frac{4}{15}\right) - 2\left(\frac{-32}{15}\right) = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad -x_1 = \frac{20}{15} - \frac{64}{15} = \frac{-44}{15} \quad \Rightarrow x_1 = \frac{44}{15}$$

Hence, $x_1 = \frac{44}{15}, x_2 = \frac{-4}{15}$ and $x_3 = \frac{-32}{15}$. **Ans.**

Example 9. *Test for consistency the following system of equations and, if consistent, solve them.*

$$x_1 + 2x_2 - x_3 = 3$$
$$3x_1 - x_2 + 2x_3 = 1$$
$$2x_1 - 2x_2 + 3x_3 = 2$$
$$x_1 - x_2 + x_3 = -1$$

(*U.P. I Semester, Winter 2002*)

Solution. The augmented matrix $C = [A, B]$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 & : & 3 \\ 3 & -1 & 2 & : & 1 \\ 2 & -2 & 3 & : & 2 \\ 1 & -1 & 1 & : & -1 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 & : & 3 \\ 0 & -7 & 5 & : & -8 \\ 0 & -6 & 5 & : & -4 \\ 0 & -3 & 2 & : & -4 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 3R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 & : & 3 \\ 0 & -7 & 5 & : & -8 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{5}{7} & : & \frac{20}{7} \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{-1}{7} & : & \frac{-4}{7} \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_3 \to R_3 - \frac{6}{7}R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - \frac{3}{7}R_2 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 & : & 3 \\ 0 & -7 & 5 & : & -8 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{5}{7} & : & \frac{20}{7} \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix} R_4 \to R_4 + \frac{1}{5}R_3$$

Rank of $C = 3 =$ Rank of A

Hence, the system of equations is consistent with unique solution.

Now, $$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 \\ 0 & -7 & 5 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{5}{7} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ -8 \\ \frac{20}{7} \end{bmatrix}$$

$$x_1 + 2x_2 - x_3 = 3 \qquad \text{...(1)}$$
$$-7x_2 + 5x_3 = -8 \qquad \text{...(2)}$$

$$\frac{5}{7}x_3 = \frac{20}{7} \Rightarrow x_3 = 4$$

Form (2), $-7x_2 + 5 \times 4 = -8 \Rightarrow -7x_2 = -28 \quad \Rightarrow x_2 = 4$

Form (1), $x_1 + 2 \times 4 - 4 = 3 \quad \Rightarrow x_1 = 3 - 8 + 4 = -1$

Hence, $x_1 = -1, \quad x_2 = 4, \quad x_3 = 4$ **Ans.**

Example 10. *Discuss the consistency of the following system of equations*

$2x + 3y + 4z = 11, \; x + 5y + 7z = 15, \; 3x + 11y + 13z = 25.$

If found consistent, solve it. (*A.M.I.E.T.E., Winter 2001*)

Solution. The augmented matrix $C = [A, B]$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 & 11 \\ 1 & 5 & 7 & 15 \\ 3 & 11 & 13 & 25 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 5 & 7 & 15 \\ 2 & 3 & 4 & 11 \\ 3 & 11 & 13 & 25 \end{bmatrix} R_1 \leftrightarrow R_2$$

$R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1, R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_1, \quad R_2 \to -\frac{1}{7}R_2, \; R_3 \to -\frac{1}{4}R_3, \quad R_3 \to R_3 - R_2$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 5 & 7 & 15 \\ 0 & -7 & -10 & -19 \\ 0 & -4 & -8 & -20 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 5 & 7 & 15 \\ 0 & 1 & \frac{10}{7} & \frac{19}{7} \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & 5 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 5 & 7 & 15 \\ 0 & 1 & \frac{10}{7} & \frac{19}{7} \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{4}{7} & \frac{16}{7} \end{bmatrix}$$

Rank of C = 3 = Rank of A

Hence, the system of equations is consistent with unique solution.

Now, $$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 5 & 7 \\ 0 & 1 & \frac{10}{7} \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{4}{7} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 15 \\ \frac{19}{7} \\ \frac{16}{7} \end{bmatrix}$$

$\Rightarrow$ $$x + 5y + 7z = 15 \quad ...(1)$$

$$y + \frac{10z}{7} = \frac{19}{7} \quad ...(2)$$

$$\frac{4z}{7} = \frac{16}{7} \Rightarrow z = 4$$

From (2), $$y + \frac{10}{7} \times 4 = \frac{19}{7} \Rightarrow y = -3$$

From (1), $x + 5(-3) + 7(4) = 15 \Rightarrow x = 2$

$$x = 2,\ y = -3,\ z = 4$$ **Ans.**

Example 11. Test for the consistency of the following system of equations :

$$x_1 + 2x_2 + 3x_3 + 4x_4 = 5$$
$$6x_1 + 7x_2 + 8x_3 + 9x_4 = 10$$
$$11x_1 + 12x_2 + 13x_3 + 14x_4 = 15$$
$$16x_1 + 17x_2 + 18x_3 + 19x_4 = 20$$
$$21x_1 + 22x_2 + 23x_3 + 24x_4 = 25$$

Solution. The given equations are written in the matrix form.

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 6 & 7 & 8 & 9 \\ 11 & 12 & 13 & 14 \\ 16 & 17 & 18 & 19 \\ 21 & 22 & 23 & 24 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \\ x_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 5 \\ 10 \\ 15 \\ 20 \\ 25 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AX = B$$

$$C = [A : B] = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 & \vdots & 5 \\ 6 & 7 & 8 & 9 & \vdots & 10 \\ 11 & 12 & 13 & 14 & \vdots & 15 \\ 16 & 17 & 18 & 19 & \vdots & 20 \\ 21 & 22 & 23 & 24 & \vdots & 25 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 & 5 \\ 0 & 5 & 10 & 15 & 20 \\ 0 & 10 & 20 & 30 & 40 \\ 0 & 15 & 30 & 45 & 60 \\ 0 & 20 & 40 & 60 & 80 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 6R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 11R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - 16R_1 \\ R_5 \to R_5 - 21R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 4 & 5 \\ 0 & 5 & 10 & 15 & 20 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - 3R_2 \\ R_5 \to R_5 - 4R_2 \end{matrix}$$

Number of non zero rows is only 2.

So Rank (A) = Rank (C) = 2

Since Rank (A) = Rank (C) < Number of unknows.

The given system of equations is consistent and has infinite number of solutions. **Ans.**

Example 12. *For what values of k, the equations $x + y + z = 1$, $2x + y + 4z = k$, $4x + y + 10z = k^2$ has a solution?* *(Q. Bank U.P. T.U. 2001)*

Solution. Here, we have

$$x + y + z = 1$$
$$2x + y + 4z = k$$
$$4x + y + 10z = k^2$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 2 & 1 & 4 \\ 4 & 1 & 10 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ k \\ k^2 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AX = B$$

$$C = [A : B] = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & \vdots & 1 \\ 2 & 1 & 4 & \vdots & k \\ 4 & 1 & 10 & \vdots & k^2 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & \vdots & 1 \\ 0 & -1 & 2 & \vdots & k-2 \\ 0 & -3 & 6 & \vdots & k^2-4 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 4R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & \vdots & 1 \\ 0 & -1 & 2 & \vdots & k-2 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & \vdots & k^2-3k+2 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 - 3R_2 \qquad \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & -1 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ k-2 \\ k^2-3k+2 \end{bmatrix}$$

If the given system has solutions, then $R(A) = R(C)$ But $R(A) = 2$

$R(C) = 2$ if $k^2 - 3k + 2 = 0 \Rightarrow (k - 1)(k - 2) = 0 \Rightarrow k = 1, k = 2$

Case I. When $k = 1$, we have

$$x + y + z = 1 \qquad ...(1)$$
$$-y + 2z = 1 - 2 = -1 \qquad ...(2)$$

Let $z = \lambda$

Putting the value of $z = \lambda$ in (2) , we have

$$-y + 2\lambda = -1 \Rightarrow y = 2\lambda + 1$$

Putting the values of y and z in (1), we have

$$x + (2\lambda + 1) + \lambda = 1 \quad \Rightarrow \quad x = -3\lambda$$

Hence solution is $x = -3\lambda$

$y = 2\lambda + 1$

$z = \lambda$ (λ is an arbitray constant)

Case II. When $k = 2$, we have

$$x + y + z = 1 \qquad ...(3)$$
$$-y + 2z = 4 - 6 + 2 \Rightarrow -y + 2z = 0 \qquad ...(4)$$

Let $z = c$

Putting the value of $z = c$ in (4), we have

$$-y + 2c = 0 \Rightarrow y = 2c$$

Putting the values of y and z in (1), we have

$$x + 2c + c = 1 \Rightarrow x = -3c + 1$$

Hence the solution is

$x = 1 - 3c$, $y = 2c$, $z = c$, where c is an arbitrary constant. **Ans.**

Example 13. *Investigate the values of λ and μ so that the equations:*

$$2x + 3y + 5z = 9$$
$$7x + 3y - 2z = 8$$
$$2x + 3y + \lambda z = \mu$$

have (i) no solution (ii)a unique solution

(iii) an infinite number of solutions. *(R.G.P.V. Bhopal, I Semester, June 2007)*

Solution. Here, we have,

$$2x + 3y + 5z = 9$$
$$7x + 3y - 2z = 8$$
$$2x + 3y + \lambda z = \mu$$

The above equations are written in the matrix form

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 5 \\ 7 & 3 & -2 \\ 2 & 3 & \lambda \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 9 \\ 8 \\ \mu \end{bmatrix}$$
$$AX = B$$

$$C = [A : B] = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 5 & \vdots & 9 \\ 7 & 3 & -2 & \vdots & 8 \\ 2 & 3 & \lambda & \vdots & \mu \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 5 & : & 9 \\ 0 & -\frac{15}{2} & -\frac{39}{2} & : & -\frac{47}{2} \\ 0 & 0 & \lambda-5 & : & \mu-9 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - \frac{7}{2}R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_1 \end{matrix}$$

(*i*) **No solution.** Rank $(A) \neq$ Rank (C)

$\lambda - 5 = 0$ or $\lambda = 5$ and $\mu - 9 \neq 0$ $\quad\Rightarrow\quad \mu \neq 9$

(*ii*) **A unique solution.** Rank $(A) = R\ (C)$ = Number of unknowns

$\lambda - 5 \neq 0 \quad\Rightarrow\quad \lambda \neq 5$ and $\mu \neq 9$

(*iii*) **An infinite number of solutions.** Rank (A) = Rank $(C) = 2$

$\lambda - 5 = 0$ and $\mu - 9 = 0$

$\lambda = 5$ and $\mu = 9$ **Ans.**

Example 14. *Determine for what values of* λ *and* μ *the following equations have* (*i*) *no solution;* (*ii*) *a unique solution;* (*iii*) *infinite number of solutions.*

$x + y + z = 6,\ x + 2y + 3z = 10,\ x + 2y + \lambda z = \mu$ (*U.P., I Sem. Winter 2001*)

Solution.
$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 1 & 2 & \lambda \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 6 \\ 10 \\ \mu \end{bmatrix}$$
$$AX = B$$

$$C = (A, B) = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & \cdot & 6 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 & \cdot & 10 \\ 1 & 2 & \lambda & \cdot & \mu \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & \cdot & 6 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & \cdot & 4 \\ 0 & 1 & \lambda-1 & \cdot & \mu-6 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & \cdot & 6 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & \cdot & 4 \\ 0 & 0 & \lambda-3 & \cdot & \mu-10 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_2 \end{matrix}$$

(*i*) There is no solution if $R\ (A) \neq R\ (C)$

i.e. $\lambda - 3 = 0$ or $\lambda = 3$ and $\mu - 10 \neq 0$ or $\mu \neq 10$

(*ii*) There is a unique solution if $R\ (A) = R\ (C) = 3$

i.e. $\lambda - 3 \neq 0$ or $\lambda \neq 3$, μ may have any value.

(*iii*) There are infinite solutions if $R\ (A) = R\ (C) = 2$

$\lambda - 3 = 0$ or $\lambda = 3$ and $\mu - 10 = 0$ or $\mu = 10$ **Ans.**

Example 15. *Find for what values of* λ *and* μ *the system of linear equations:*

$$x + y + z = 6$$
$$x + 2y + 5z = 10$$
$$2x + 3y + \lambda z = \mu$$

has (*i*) *a unique solution* (*ii*) *no solution*

(*iii*) *infinite solutions. Also find the solution for* $\lambda = 2$ *and* $\mu = 8$.

(*Uttarakhand, 1st semester, Dec. 2006*)

Solution. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 5 \\ 2 & 3 & \lambda \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 6 \\ 10 \\ \mu \end{bmatrix}$

$$AX = B$$

$$C = (A, B) = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & : & 6 \\ 1 & 2 & 5 & : & 10 \\ 2 & 3 & \lambda & : & \mu \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & : & 6 \\ 0 & 1 & 4 & : & 4 \\ 0 & 1 & \lambda-2 & : & \mu-12 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & : & 6 \\ 0 & 1 & 4 & : & 4 \\ 0 & 0 & \lambda-6 & : & \mu-16 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_2 \end{matrix} \qquad ...(1)$$

(*i*) **A unique solution**
If $R(A) = R(C) = 3$
then $\lambda - 6 \neq 0 \Rightarrow \lambda \neq 6$ and $\mu - 16 \neq 0 \Rightarrow \mu \neq 16$

(*ii*) **No solutions**
If $R(A) \neq R(C)$, then $R(A) = 2$ and $R(C) = 3$
$\lambda - 6 = 0 \Rightarrow \lambda = 6$ and $\mu - 16 \neq 0 \Rightarrow \mu \neq 16$

(*iii*) **Infinite solutions**
If $R(A) = R(C) = 2$
then $\lambda - 6 = 0$ and $\mu - 16 = 0$
$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda = 6$ and $\mu = 16$

(*iv*) Putting $\lambda = 2$ and $\mu = 8$ in (1), we get

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 & : & 6 \\ 0 & 1 & 4 & : & 4 \\ 0 & 0 & -4 & : & -8 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & 0 & -4 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 6 \\ 4 \\ -8 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$x + y + z = 6$$
$$y + 4z = 4$$
$$-4z = -8 \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad z = 2$$

Putting $z = 2$ in (3), we get

$$y + 8 = 4 \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad y = -4$$

Putting $y = -4$, $z = 2$ in (2), we get

$$x - 4 + 2 = 6 \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad x = 8$$

Hence, $\quad x = 8, \; y = -4, \; z = 2$ **Ans.**

Example 16. *Show that the equations*

$$-2x + y + z = a$$
$$x - 2y + z = b$$
$$x + y - 2z = c$$

have no solution unless a + b + c = 0. In which case they have infinitely many solutions? Find these solutions when a = 1, b = 1 and c = – 2.

Solution. Augmented matrix,

$$C = [A : B] = \begin{bmatrix} -2 & 1 & 1 & : & a \\ 1 & -2 & 1 & : & b \\ 1 & 1 & -2 & : & c \end{bmatrix} \qquad [\text{Rank } (A) = 2]$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -2 & : & c \\ 1 & -2 & 1 & : & b \\ -2 & 1 & 1 & : & a \end{bmatrix} R_1 \leftrightarrow R_3 \qquad \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -2 & : & c \\ 0 & -3 & 3 & : & b-c \\ 0 & 3 & -3 & : & a+2c \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_2 + 2R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -2 & : & c \\ 0 & -3 & 3 & : & b-c \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & : & a+b+c \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 + R_2 \qquad \text{... (1)}$$

Case I. If $a + b + c \neq 0$

Rank of $C = 3$.

But Rank of $A = 2$

$\Rightarrow$ $R(C) \neq R(A)$ where A is the coefficient matrix.

Hence, the system being inconsistent, have no solution.

Case II. If $a + b + c = 0$

Rank of $C = 2$ and $R(A) = 2$

$\Rightarrow$ $R(C) = R(A)$

Hence, the system has infinite number of solutions.

Case III. On putting $a = 1$, $b = 1$ and $c = -2$ in (1), we get

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & -2 & : & -2 \\ 0 & -3 & 3 & : & 3 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$x + y - 2z = -2 \qquad \text{...(2)}$$

$$-3y + 3z = 3 \qquad \text{...(3)}$$

Let $z = k$, k being an arbitrary constant.

From (3) $-3y + 3k = 3 \quad \Rightarrow \quad y = k - 1$

Putting $y = k - 1$ and $z = k$ in (2), we get

$$x + (k-1) - 2k = -2 \quad \Rightarrow \quad x = k - 1$$

Hence, the solutions are $x = k - 1$, $y = k - 1$, $z = k$ **Ans.**

Example 17. *Find for what values of k the set of equations*

$2x - 3y + 6z - 5t = 3$, $y - 4z + t = 1$, $4x - 5y + 8z - 9t = k$

has (i) no solution (ii) infinite number of solutions. (*A.M.I.E.T.E., Summer 2004*)

Solution. The augmented matrix $C = [A, B]$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -3 & 6 & -5 & \cdot & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & -4 & 1 & \cdot & 1 \\ 4 & -5 & 8 & -9 & \cdot & k \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 2 & -3 & 6 & -5 & \cdot & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & -4 & 1 & \cdot & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & -4 & 1 & \cdot & k-6 \end{bmatrix} \quad R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_1$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 2 & -3 & 6 & -5 & \cdot & 3 \\ 0 & 1 & -4 & 1 & \cdot & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 & \cdot & k-7 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 - R_2$$

(*i*) There is no solution if $R(A) \neq R(C)$

$k - 7 \neq 0$ or $k \neq 7$, $R(A) = 2$ and $R(C) = 3$.

(*ii*) There are infinite solutions if $R(A) = R(C) = 2$

$k - 7 = 0 \Rightarrow k = 7$ **Ans.**

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -3 & 6 & -5 \\ 0 & 1 & -4 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \\ t \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$2x - 3y + 6z - 5t = 3 \qquad ...(1)$$
$$y - 4z + t = 1 \qquad ...(2)$$

Let $t = k_1$ and $z = k_2$.

From (2), $y - 4k_2 + k_1 = 1$ or $y = 1 + 4k_2 - k_1$

From (l), $2x - 3 - 12k_2 + 3k_1 + 6k_2 - 5k_1 = 3$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad 2x = 6 + 6k_2 + 2k_1 \Rightarrow x = 3 + 3k_2 + k_1$$
$$y = 1 + 4k_2 - k_1 \Rightarrow z = k_2,\ t = k_1$$ **Ans.**

20.4. HOMOGENEOUS EQUATIONS

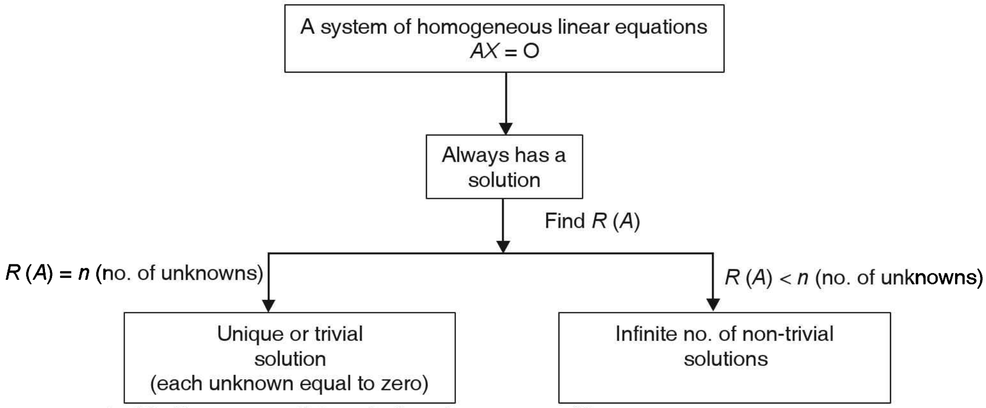
For a system of homogeneous linear equations $AX = O$

(*i*) $X = O$ is always a solution. This solution in which each unknown has the value zero is called the **Null Solution** or the **Trivial solution.** Thus a homogeneous system is always consistent.

A system of homogeneous linear equations has either the trivial solution or an infinite number of solutions.

(*ii*) If $R(A)$ = number of unknowns, the system has only the trivial solution.

(*iii*) If $R(A)$ < number of unknowns, the system has an infinite number of non-trivial solutions.



Example 18. *Determine 'b' such that the system of homogeneous equations*

$$2x + y + 2z = 0\ ;$$
$$x + y + 3z = 0\ ;$$
$$4x + 3y + bz = 0$$

has (i) Trivial solution

(ii) Non-Trivial solution . Find the Non-Trivial solution using matrix method.

(*U.P., I Sem Dec 2008*)

Solution. Here, we have

$$2x + y + 2z = 0$$
$$x + y + 3z = 0$$
$$4x + 3y + bz = 0$$

(*i*) **For trivial solution:** We know that $x = 0$, $y = 0$ and $z = 0$. So, b can have any value.

(*ii*) **For non-trivial solution:** The given equations are written in the matrix form as :

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 4 & 3 & b \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AX = B$$

$$R_1 \leftrightarrow R_2, \qquad R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1,\ R_3 \to R_3 - 4R_1, \qquad R_3 \to R_3 - R_2$$

$$C = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 2 & : & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 3 & : & 0 \\ 4 & 3 & b & : & 0 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 & : & 0 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 & : & 0 \\ 4 & 3 & b & : & 0 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 & : & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & -4 & : & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & b-12 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 & : & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & -4 & : & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & b-8 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

For non trivial solution or infinite solutions $R(C) = R(A) = 2 <$ Number of unknowns

$$b - 8 = 0, \quad b = 8$$ **Ans.**

Example 19. *Find the values of k such that the system of equations*

$x + ky + 3z = 0, \quad 4x + 3y + kz = 0, \quad 2x + y + 2z = 0$

has non-trivial solution.

Solution. The set of equations is written in the form of matrices

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & k & 3 \\ 4 & 3 & k \\ 2 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, \quad AX = B, \quad C = [A : B] = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & k & 3 & : & 0 \\ 4 & 3 & k & : & 0 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

On interchanging first and third rows, we have

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 2 & : & 0 \\ 4 & 3 & k & : & 0 \\ 1 & k & 3 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1, \quad R_3 \to R_3 - \frac{1}{2}R_1 \qquad R_3 \to R_3 - \left(k - \frac{1}{2}\right)R_2$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 2 & : & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & k-4 & : & 0 \\ 0 & k-\frac{1}{2} & 2 & : & 0 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 2 & : & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & k-4 & : & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 2-\left(k-\frac{1}{2}\right)(k-4) & : & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

For a non-trivial solution or for infinite solution, $R(A) = R(C) = 2$

so $$2 - \left(k - \frac{1}{2}\right)(k-4) = 0 \Rightarrow 2 - k^2 + 4k + \frac{k}{2} - 2 = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow -k^2 + \frac{9}{2}k = 0 \Rightarrow k\left(-k + \frac{9}{2}\right) = 0 \Rightarrow k = \frac{9}{2}, k = 0$$ **Ans.**

20.5 CRAMER'S RULE

$$a_1x + b_1y + c_1z = d_1$$
$$a_2x + b_2y + c_2z = d_2$$
$$a_3x + b_3y + c_3z = d_3$$

then $$D = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}, \qquad D_1 = \begin{vmatrix} d_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ d_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ d_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$D_2 = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & d_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & d_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & d_3 & c_3 \end{vmatrix}, \qquad D_3 = \begin{vmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & d_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & d_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & d_3 \end{vmatrix}$$

$$x = \frac{D_1}{D}, \quad y = \frac{D_2}{D}, \quad z = \frac{D_3}{D}$$

Equations with three unknowns

- $D \neq 0$ Consistent with unique solution
- $D = 0$
  - $D_1 = D_2 = D_3 = 0$ Consistent with infinitely many solutions
  - D_1 or D_2 or $D_3 \neq 0$ Inconsistent

Example 20. *Show that the homogeneous system of equations*

$x + y\cos\gamma + z\cos\beta = 0;\quad x\cos\gamma + y + z\cos\alpha = 0;\quad x\cos\beta + y\cos\alpha + z = 0$

has non-trivial solution if $\alpha + \beta + \gamma = 0$. (*Q. Bank U.P.T.U. 2001*)

Solution. If the system has only non-trivial solutions , then

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1 & \cos\gamma & \cos\beta \\ \cos\gamma & 1 & \cos\alpha \\ \cos\beta & \cos\alpha & 1 \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad 1 - \cos^2\alpha + \cos\gamma(\cos\alpha\cos\beta - \cos\gamma) + \cos\beta(\cos\gamma\cos\alpha - \cos\beta) = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \sin^2\alpha - \cos^2\beta - \cos^2\gamma + 2\cos\alpha\cos\beta\cos\gamma = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad -(\cos^2\beta - \sin^2\alpha) - \cos^2\gamma + 2\cos\alpha\cos\beta\cos\gamma = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad -\cos(\alpha + \beta)\cos(\beta - \alpha) - \cos^2\gamma + 2\cos\alpha\cos\beta\cos\gamma = 0$$

[if $\alpha + \beta + \gamma = 0$]

$$\Rightarrow \quad -\cos(-\gamma)\cos(\beta - \alpha) - \cos^2\gamma + 2\cos\alpha\cos\beta\cos\gamma = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad -\cos\gamma[\cos(\beta - \alpha) + \cos(\beta + \alpha)] + 2\cos\alpha\cos\beta\cos\gamma = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad -2\cos\beta\cos\alpha\cos\gamma + 2\cos\alpha\cos\beta\cos\gamma = 0$$

which is true.

Hence, the given homogeneous system of equations has non-trivial solution if $\alpha + \beta + \gamma = 0$.

Proved.

Example 21. *Find values of λ for which the following system of equations is consistent and has non-trivial solutions. Solve equations for all such values of λ.*

$$(\lambda - 1)x + (3\lambda + 1)y + 2\lambda z = 0$$

$$(\lambda - 1)x + (4\lambda - 2)y + (\lambda + 3)z = 0$$

$$2x + (3\lambda + 1)y + 3(\lambda - 1)z = 0$$

(*A.M.I.E.T.E., Summer 2010, 2001*)

Solution.

$$\begin{bmatrix} (\lambda-1) & (3\lambda+1) & 2\lambda \\ (\lambda-1) & (4\lambda-2) & (\lambda+3) \\ 2 & (3\lambda+1) & (3\lambda-3) \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \ldots(1)$$

$$AX = 0$$

For infinite solutions, $|A| = 0$

$$\begin{vmatrix} \lambda-1 & 3\lambda+1 & 2\lambda \\ \lambda-1 & 4\lambda-2 & \lambda+3 \\ 2 & 3\lambda+1 & 3\lambda-3 \end{vmatrix} = 0, \quad \begin{vmatrix} 0 & -\lambda+3 & \lambda-3 \\ \lambda-1 & 4\lambda-2 & \lambda+3 \\ 2 & 3\lambda+1 & 3\lambda-3 \end{vmatrix} = 0, \quad R_1 \to R_1 - R_2$$

$$\begin{vmatrix} 0 & 0 & \lambda-3 \\ \lambda-1 & 5\lambda+1 & \lambda+3 \\ 2 & 6\lambda-2 & 3\lambda-3 \end{vmatrix} = 0, \quad C_2 \to C_2 + C_3$$

$$(\lambda - 3)[(\lambda - 1)(6\lambda - 2) - 2(5\lambda + 1)] = 0$$

$$[6\lambda^2 - 8\lambda + 2 - 10\lambda - 2] = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad 6\lambda^2 - 18\lambda = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad 6\lambda\,(\lambda - 3) = 0,\ \lambda = 3$$

On putting $\lambda = 3$ in (1), we get

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 10 & 6 \\ 2 & 10 & 6 \\ 2 & 10 & 6 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 10 & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$2x + 10y + 6z = 0 \Rightarrow x + 5y + 3z = 0$$

Let $\quad x = k_1, y = k_2, 3z = -k_1 - 5k_2 \Rightarrow z = \dfrac{-k_1}{3} - \dfrac{5k_2}{3}$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 20.1

Test the consistency of the following equations and solve them if possible.

1. $3x + 3y + 2z = 1, \quad x + 2y = 4, \quad 10y + 3z = -2, \quad 2x - 3y - z = 5$

Ans. Consistent, $x = 2,\ y = 1,\ z = -4$ *(R.G.P.V. Bhopal 1st Sem 2001)*

2. $x_1 - x_2 + x_3 - x_4 + x_5 = 1, \quad 2x_1 - x_2 + 3x_3 + 4x_5 = 2,$

$3x_1 - 2x_2 + 2x_3 + x_4 + x_5 = 1, \quad x_1 + x_3 + 2x_4 + x_5 = 0$ *(A.M.I.E.T.E., Winter 2003)*

Ans. $x_1 = -3k_1 + k_2 - 1, x_2 = -3k_1 - 1, x_3 = k_1 - 2k_2 + 1, x_4 = k_1, x_4 = k_1, x_5 = k_2 1$

3. Find the value of k for which the following system of equations is consistent.

$3x_1 - 2x_2 + 2x_3 = 3, \ x_1 + kx_2 - 3x_3 = 0, \ 4x_1 + x_2 + 2x_3 = 7$ **Ans.** $k = \dfrac{1}{4}$

4. Find the value of λ for which the system of equations

$x + y + 4z = 1, x + 2y - 2z = 1, \ \lambda x + y + z = 1$

will have a unique solution. *(A.M.I.E., Winter 2000)* **Ans.** $\lambda \neq \dfrac{7}{10}$

5. Determine the values of a and b for which the system $\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -2 & 1 \\ 5 & -8 & 9 \\ 2 & 1 & a \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} b \\ 3 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}$

(*i*) has a unique solution, (*ii*) has no solution and, (*iii*) has infinitely many solutions.

Ans. (*i*) $a \neq -3$, (*ii*) $a = -3, b \neq \dfrac{1}{3}$, (*iii*) $a = -3, b = \dfrac{1}{3}$

6. Choose λ that makes the following system of linear equations consistent and find the general solution of the system for that λ.

$x + y - z + t = 2, 2y + 4z + 2t = 3, x + 2y + z + 2t = \lambda$

Ans. $\lambda = \dfrac{7}{2}$, $x = \dfrac{1}{2} + 3k_2$, $y = \dfrac{3}{2} - 2k_2 - k_1$, $z = k_2$, $t = k_1$

7. Show that the equations

$3x + 4y + 5z = a, 4x + 5y + 6z = b, 5x + 6y + 7z = c$

don't have a solution unless $a + c = 2b$.

Solve the equations when $a = b = c = -1$ *(MTU, Dec. 2012)* **Ans.** $x = k + 1, y = -2k - 1, z = k$

8. Find the values of k, such that the system of equations

$4x_1 + 9x_2 + x_3 = 0, \ kx_1 + 3x_2 + kx_3 = 0, x_1 + 4x_2 + 2x_3 = 0$

has non-trivial solution. Hence, find the solution of the system.

Ans. $k = 1, x_1 = 2\lambda, x_2 = -\lambda, x_3 = \lambda$

9. Find values of λ for which the following system of equations has a non-trivial solution.

$3x_1 + x_2 - \lambda x_3 = 0, 2x_1 + 4x_2 + \lambda x_3 = 0, 8x_1 - 4x_2 - 6x_3 = 0$ **Ans.** $\lambda = 1$

10. Find value of λ so that the following system of homogeneous equations have exactly two linearly independent solutions

$\lambda x_1 - x_2 - x_3 = 0, \ -x_1 + \lambda x_2 - x_3 = 0, \ -x_1 - x_2 + \lambda x_3 = 0,$ **Ans.** $\lambda = -1$

11. Find the values of k for which the following system of equations has a non-trivial solution.

$(3k - 8)x + 3y + 3z = 0, 3x + (3k - 8)y + 3z = 0, \ 3x + 3y + (3k - 8)z = 0$ *(AMIETE, June 2010)*

Ans. $k = \dfrac{2}{3}, \dfrac{11}{3}$

12. Solve the homogeneous system of equations :
$4x + 3y - z = 0,\ 3x + 4y + z = 0,\ x - y - 2z = 0,\ 5x + y - 4z = 0$ **Ans.** $x = k,\ y = -k,\ z = k$

13. If $A = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 2 & 1 \\ 3 & -1 & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & \lambda \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** (*i*) $\lambda \neq 1$, (*ii*) $\lambda = 1$

find the values of λ for which equation $AX = 0$ has (*i*) a unique solution, (*ii*) more than one solution.

14. Show that the following system of equations:
$$x + 2y - 2u = 0,\quad 2x - y - u = 0,\quad x + 2z - u = 0,\quad 4x - y + 3z - u = 0$$
do not have a non-trivial solution.

15. Determine the values of λ and μ such that the following system has (*i*) no solution (*ii*) a unique solution (*iii*) infinite number of solutions:
$$2x - 5y + 2z = 8,\quad 2x + 4y + 6z = 5,\quad x + 2y + \lambda z = \mu$$
Ans. (*i*) $\lambda = 3,\ \mu \neq \frac{5}{2}$ (*ii*) $\lambda \neq 3$, (*iii*) $\lambda = 3,\ \mu = \frac{5}{2}$

16. Test the following system of equations for consistency. If possible, solve for non-trivial solutions.
$3x + 4y - z - 6t = 0,\ 2x + 3y + 2z - 3t = 0,\ 2x + y - 14z - 9t = 0,\ x + 3y + 13z + 3t = 0$
(*A.M.I.E.T.E., Winter 2000*) **Ans.** $x = 11k_1 + 6k_2,\ y = -8k_1 - 3k_2,\ z = k_1\ \ t = k_2$

17. Given the following system of equations
$2x - 2y + 5z + 3z = 0,\ 4x - y + z + w = 0,\ 3x - 2y + 3z + 4w = 0,\ x - 3y + 7z + 6w = 0$
Reduce the coefficient matrix A into Echelon form and find the rank utilising the property of rank, test the given system of equation for consistency and if possible find the solution of the given system.
(*A.M.I.E.T.E., Summer 2001*) **Ans.** $x = 5k,\ y = 36k,\ z = 7k,\ w = 9k$

18. Find the values of λ for which the equations
$$(2 - \lambda)x + 2y + 3 = 0,\quad 2x + (4 - \lambda)y + 7 = 0,\quad 2x + 5y + (6 - \lambda) = 0$$
are consistent and find the values of x and y corresponding to each of these values of λ.
(*R.G.P.V., Bhopal I sem. 2003, 2001*) **Ans.** $\lambda = 1, -1, 12$.

20.6 VECTORS

A n-tuple is a set of n similar things. If the place of every members of a set is fixed then it is called an *ordered* set. Any ordered n-tuple of numbers is called a *n-vector*. Thus the coordinates of a point in space is called 3-vector (x, y, z). The members of a set are called the components of a vector so x, y, z in a 3-vector are called components.

$x_1, x_2, x_3 \ldots. x_n$ are the components of a n-vector $X = (x_1, x_2, x_3 \ldots. x_n)$.

Each row of a matrix is a vector and each column of the matrix is also a vector.

20.7 LINEAR DEPENDENCE AND INDEPENDENCE OF VECTORS

Vectors (matrices) $X_1, X_2, \ldots. X_n$ are said to be dependent if

(1) all the vectors (row or column matrices) are of the same order.

(2) n scalars $\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \ldots \lambda_n$ (not all zero) exist such that
$$\lambda_1 X_1 + \lambda_2 X_2 + \lambda_3 X_3 + \ldots.. + \lambda_n X_n = 0$$

Otherwise they are linearly independent.

Remember: If in a set of vectors, any vector of the set is the combination of the remaining vectors, then the vectors are called dependent vectors.

Example 22. *Examine the following vectors for linear dependence and find the relation if it exists.*

$X_1 = (1, 2, 4),\ X_2 = (2, -1, 3),\ X_3 = (0, 1, 2),\ X_4 = (-3, 7, 2)$ (*U.P., I Sem. Winter* 2002)

Solution. Consider the matrix equation
$$\lambda_1 X_1 + \lambda_2 X_2 + \lambda_3 X_3 + \lambda_4 X_4 = 0$$
$$\Rightarrow \lambda_1 (1, 2, 4) + \lambda_2 (2, -1, 3) + \lambda_3 (0, 1, 2) + \lambda_4 (-3, 7, 2) = 0$$

$$\lambda_1 + 2\lambda_2 + 0\lambda_3 - 3\lambda_4 = 0$$
$$2\lambda_1 - \lambda_2 + \lambda_3 + 7\lambda_4 = 0$$
$$4\lambda_1 + 3\lambda_2 + 2\lambda_3 + 2\lambda_4 = 0$$

This is the homogeneous system

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 0 & -3 \\ 2 & -1 & 1 & 7 \\ 4 & 3 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \lambda_1 \\ \lambda_2 \\ \lambda_3 \\ \lambda_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{or } A\,\lambda = 0$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 0 & -3 \\ 0 & -5 & 1 & 13 \\ 0 & -5 & 2 & 14 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \lambda_1 \\ \lambda_2 \\ \lambda_3 \\ \lambda_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - 4R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 0 & -3 \\ 0 & -5 & 1 & 13 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \lambda_1 \\ \lambda_2 \\ \lambda_3 \\ \lambda_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \qquad R_3 \to R_3 - R_2$$

$$\lambda_1 + 2\,\lambda_2 - 3\,\lambda_4 = 0$$
$$-5\,\lambda_2 + \lambda_3 + 13\,\lambda_4 = 0$$
$$\lambda_3 + \lambda_4 = 0$$

Let $\quad \lambda_4 = t,\ \lambda_3 + t = 0,\ \lambda_3 = -\,t$

$$-\,5\lambda_2 - t + 13\,t = 0,\ \lambda_2 = \frac{12\,t}{5}$$

$$\lambda_1 + \frac{24\,t}{5} - 3t = 0 \text{ or } \lambda_1 = \frac{-9\,t}{5}$$

Hence, the given vectors are linearly dependent.

Substituting the values of λ in (1), we get

$$-\frac{9\,t\,X_1}{5} + \frac{12\,t}{5}X_2 - t\,X_3 + t\,X_4 = 0 \Rightarrow -\frac{9X_1}{5} + \frac{12\,X_2}{5} - X_3 + X_4 = 0$$

$\Rightarrow \quad 9\,X_1 - 12\,X_2 + 5\,X_3 - 5\,X_4 = 0$ **Ans.**

Example 23. *Define linear dependence and independence of vectors.*

Examine for linear dependence [1, 0, 2, 1], [3, 1, 2, 1], [4, 6, 2, –4], [–6, 0, –3, –4] and find the relation between them, if possible.

Solution. Consider the matrix equation

$$\lambda_1 X_1 + \lambda_2 X_2 + \lambda_3 X_3 + \lambda_4 X_4 = 0 \qquad \text{...(1)}$$

$$\lambda_1 (1, 0, 2, 1) + \lambda_2 (3, 1, 2, 1) + \lambda_3 (4, 6, 2, -4) + \lambda_4 (-6, 0, -3, -4) = 0$$

$$\lambda_1 + 3\,\lambda_2 + 4\,\lambda_3 - 6\,\lambda_4 = 0$$
$$0\,\lambda_1 + \lambda_2 + 6\,\lambda_3 + 0\,\lambda_4 = 0$$
$$2\,\lambda_1 + 2\,\lambda_2 + 2\,\lambda_3 - 3\,\lambda_4 = 0$$
$$\lambda_1 + \lambda_2 - 4\,\lambda_3 - 4\,\lambda_4 = 0$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 4 & -6 \\ 0 & 1 & 6 & 0 \\ 2 & 2 & 2 & -3 \\ 1 & 1 & -4 & -4 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \lambda_1 \\ \lambda_2 \\ \lambda_3 \\ \lambda_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 4 & -6 \\ 0 & 1 & 6 & 0 \\ 0 & -4 & -6 & 9 \\ 0 & -2 & -8 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \lambda_1 \\ \lambda_2 \\ \lambda_3 \\ \lambda_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \begin{matrix} R_3 \to R_3 - 2R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 4 & -6 \\ 0 & 1 & 6 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 18 & 9 \\ 0 & 0 & 4 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \lambda_1 \\ \lambda_2 \\ \lambda_3 \\ \lambda_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \begin{matrix} R_3 \to R_3 + 4R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 + 2R_2 \end{matrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 4 & -6 \\ 0 & 1 & 6 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 18 & 9 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} \lambda_1 \\ \lambda_2 \\ \lambda_3 \\ \lambda_4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad R_4 \to R_4 - \frac{2}{9}R_3$$

$$\lambda_1 + 3\lambda_2 + 4\lambda_3 - 6\lambda_4 = 0$$
$$\lambda_2 + 6\lambda_3 = 0$$
$$18\lambda_3 + 9\lambda_4 = 0$$

Let $\lambda_4 = t$, $\quad 18\lambda_3 + 9t = 0$ or $\lambda_3 = \dfrac{-t}{2}$

$$\lambda_2 - 3t = 0 \text{ or } \lambda_2 = 3t$$
$$\lambda_1 + 9t - 2t - 6t = 0$$
$$\lambda_1 = -t$$

Substituting the values of λ_1, λ_2, λ_3 and λ_4 in (1), we get

$$-tX_1 + 3tX_2 - \frac{t}{2}X_3 + tX_4 = 0 \text{ or } 2X_1 - 6X_2 + X_3 - 2X_4 = 0$$ **Ans.**

Example 24. *Show that row vectors of the matrix*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -2 \\ -1 & 3 & 0 \\ 0 & -2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$ *are linearly independent.* (*U.P., I Sem, Dec 2009*)

Solution. Here, we have three vectors

$$X_1 = (1, 2, -2)'$$
$$X_2 = (-1, 3, 0)'$$
$$X_3 = (0, -2, 1)'$$

$$X_1 = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ -2 \end{bmatrix}, X_2 = \begin{bmatrix} -1 \\ 3 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, X_3 = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ -2 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Consider the equation

$$\lambda_1 X_1 + \lambda_2 X_2 + \lambda_3 X_3 = 0 \qquad \ldots(1)$$

$$\lambda_1 \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ -2 \end{bmatrix} + \lambda_2 \begin{bmatrix} -1 \\ 3 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} + \lambda_3 \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ -2 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\lambda_1 - \lambda_2 + 0\lambda_3 = 0$$
$$2\lambda_1 + 3\lambda_2 - 2\lambda_3 = 0$$

$$-2\lambda_1 + 0\lambda_2 + \lambda_3 = 0$$

which is the system of homogeneous equations

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 2 & 3 & -2 \\ -2 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} \lambda_1 \\ \lambda_2 \\ \lambda_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 5 & -2 \\ 0 & -2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} \lambda_1 \\ \lambda_2 \\ \lambda_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 + 2R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 0 & 5 & -2 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{1}{5} \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} \lambda_1 \\ \lambda_2 \\ \lambda_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 + \frac{2}{5}R_2$$

$$\lambda_1 - \lambda_2 = 0 \quad \text{...(2)}$$

$$5\lambda_2 - 2\lambda_3 = 0 \quad \text{...(3)}$$

$$\frac{1}{5}\lambda_3 = 0 \Rightarrow \lambda_3 \quad \text{....(4)}$$

Putting the value of λ_3 in (3), we get

$$5\lambda_2 - 2(0) = 0 \Rightarrow \lambda_2 = 0$$

Putting the value of λ_2 in (2) , we get

$$\lambda_1 - 0 = 0 \Rightarrow \lambda_1 = 0$$

Thus non zero values of λ_1, λ_2, λ_3 do not exist which can satisfy (1). Hence by definition the given system of vectors is linearly independent. **Proved.**

20.8 LINEARLY DEPENDENCE AND INDEPENDENCE OF VECTORS BY RANK METHOD

1. If the rank of the matrix of the given vectors is equal to number of vectors, then the vectors are linearly independent.
2. If the rank of the matrix of the given vectors is less than the number of vectors, then the vectors are linearly dependent.

Example 25. *Show using a matrix that the set of vectors*

X = [1, 2,– 3, 4], Y = [3, – 1, 2, 1] , Z = [1, –5 ,8 –7] is linearly dependent.

Solution. Here, we have

$X = [1, 2, -3, 4]$, $Y = [3, -1, 2, 1]$, $Z = [1, -5, 8, -7]$

Let us form a matrix of the above vectors

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 3 & -1 & 2 & 1 \\ 1 & -5 & 8 & -7 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -7 & 11 & -11 \\ 0 & -7 & 11 & -11 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 - 3R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_1 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -3 & 4 \\ 0 & -7 & 11 & -11 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} R_3 \to R_3 - R_2$$

Here the rank of the matrix = 2 < Number of vectors

Hence, vectors are linearly dependent. **Proved.**

Example 26. *Show using a matrix that the set of vectors : [2, 5, 2, –3], [3, 6, 5, 2], [4, 5, 14, 14], [5, 10, 8, 4] is linearly independent.*

Solution. Here, the given vectors are

[2, 5, 2, –3], [3, 6, 5, 2], [4, 5, 14, 14], [5, 10, 8, 4]

Let us form a matrix of the above vectors :

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 5 & 2 & -3 \\ 3 & 6 & 5 & 2 \\ 4 & 5 & 14 & 14 \\ 5 & 10 & 8 & 4 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 5 & 2 & -3 \\ 1 & 1 & 3 & 5 \\ 1 & -1 & 9 & 12 \\ 1 & 5 & -6 & -10 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - R_3 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 & 5 \\ 2 & 5 & 2 & -3 \\ 1 & -1 & 9 & 12 \\ 1 & 5 & -6 & -10 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_1 \leftrightarrow R_2 \\ R_2 \leftrightarrow R_1 \\ \\ \\ \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 & 5 \\ 0 & 3 & -4 & -13 \\ 0 & -2 & 6 & 7 \\ 0 & 4 & -9 & -15 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ R_2 \to R_2 - 2R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_1 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$$\sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 & 5 \\ 0 & 3 & -4 & -13 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{10}{3} & \frac{-5}{3} \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{-11}{3} & \frac{7}{3} \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} \\ \\ R_3 \to R_3 + \frac{2}{3}R_2 \\ R_4 \to R_4 - \frac{4}{3}R_2 \end{matrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 & 5 \\ 0 & 3 & -4 & -13 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{10}{3} & \frac{-5}{3} \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & \frac{1}{2} \end{bmatrix} R_4 \to R_4 + \frac{11}{10}R_3$$

Here, the rank of the matrix = 4 = Number of vectors

Hence, the vectors are linearly independent. **Proved.**

EXERCISE 20.2

Examine the following system of vectors for linear dependence. If dependent, find the relation between them.

1. $X_1 = (1, -1, 1), X_2 = (2, 1, 1), X_3 = (3, 0, 2)$. **Ans.** Dependent, $X_1 + X_2 - X_3 = 0$
2. $X_1 = (1, 2, 3), X_2 = (2, -2, 6)$. **Ans.** Independent
3. $X_1 = (3, 1, -4), X_2 = (2, 2, -3), X_3 = (0, -4, 1)$. **Ans.** Dependent, $2X_1 - 3X_2 - X_3 = 0$
4. $X_1 = (1, 1, 1, 3), X_2 = (1, 2, 3, 4), X_3 = (2, 3, 4, 7)$. **Ans.** Dependent, $X_1 + X_2 - X_3 = 0$
5. $X_1 = (1, 1, -1, 1), X_2 = (1, -1, 2, -1), X_3 = (3, 1, 0, 1)$. **Ans.** Dependent, $2X_1 + X_2 - X_3 = 0$
6. $X_1 = (1, -1, 2, 0), X_2 = (2, 1, 1, 1), X_3 = (3, -1, 2, -1), X_4 = (3, 0, 3, 1)$.
   Ans. Dependent, $X_1 + X_2 - X_4 = 0$
7. Show that the column vectors of following matrix A are linearly independent:

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 6 & 2 & 1 \\ 4 & 3 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$$

8. Show that the vectors $x_1 = (2, 3, 1, -1)$, $x_2 = (2, 3, 1, -2)$, $x_3 = (4, 6, 2, 1)$ are linearly dependent. Express one of the vectors as linear combination of the others.
9. Find whether or not the following set of vectors are linearly dependent or independent:
   (*i*) (1, –2), (2, 1), (3, 2) (*ii*) (1, 1, 1, 1), (0, 1, 1, 1), (0, 0, 1, 1), (0, 0, 0, 1).
   Ans. (*i*) Dependent (*ii*) Independent
10. Show that the vectors $x_1 = (a_1, b_1)$, $x_2 = (a_2, b_2)$ are linearly dependent if $a_1 b_2 - a_2 b_1 = 0$.

20.9 ANOTHER METHOD (ADJOINT METHOD) TO SOLVE LINEAR EQUATIONS

Let the equations be

$$a_1 x + a_2 y + a_3 z = d_1$$
$$b_1 x + b_2 y + b_3 z = d_2$$
$$c_1 x + c_2 y + c_3 z = d_3$$

We write the above equations in the matrix form

$$\begin{bmatrix} a_1 x + a_2 y + a_3 z \\ b_1 x + b_2 y + b_3 z \\ c_1 x + c_2 y + c_3 z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} d_1 \\ d_2 \\ d_3 \end{bmatrix} \text{ or } \begin{bmatrix} a_1 & a_2 & a_3 \\ b_1 & b_2 & b_3 \\ c_1 & c_2 & c_3 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} d_1 \\ d_2 \\ d_3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AX = B \qquad \ldots(1)$$

where $A = \begin{bmatrix} a_1 & a_2 & a_3 \\ b_1 & b_2 & b_3 \\ c_1 & c_2 & c_3 \end{bmatrix}, X = \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix}$ and $B = \begin{bmatrix} d_1 \\ d_2 \\ d_3 \end{bmatrix}$

Multiplying (1) by A^{-1}.

$$A^{-1}AX = A^{-1}B \text{ or } IX = A^{-1}B \text{ or } X = A^{-1}B.$$

Example 27. *Solve, with the help of matrices, the simultaneous equations*

$x + y + z = 3,\ x + 2y + 3z = 4,\ x + 4y + 9z = 6$ (*A.M.I.E., Summer* 2004, 2003)

Solution. The given equations in the matrix form are written as below:

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 1 & 4 & 9 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 4 \\ 6 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AX = B$$

where $$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 1 & 4 & 9 \end{bmatrix}, X = \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix}, B = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 4 \\ 6 \end{bmatrix}$$

Now we have to find out the A^{-1}.

$$|A| = 1 \times 6 + 1 \times (-6) + 1 \times 2 = 6 - 6 + 2 = 2$$

$$\text{Matrix of co-factors} = \begin{bmatrix} 6 & -6 & 2 \\ -5 & 8 & -3 \\ 1 & -2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}, \textit{Adjoint } A = \begin{bmatrix} 6 & -5 & 1 \\ -6 & 8 & -2 \\ 2 & -3 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^{-1} = \frac{1}{|A|} \textit{ Adjoint } A = \frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} 6 & -5 & 1 \\ -6 & 8 & -2 \\ 2 & -3 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$X = A^{-1}B = \frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} 6 & -5 & 1 \\ -6 & 8 & -2 \\ 2 & -3 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 4 \\ 6 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} 18-20+6 \\ -18+32-12 \\ 6-12+6 \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} 4 \\ 2 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ 1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$x = 2, y = 1, z = 0$$ **Ans.**

Example 28. *Given the matrices*

$$A \equiv \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 3 & -1 & 1 \\ 4 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}, X \equiv \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} \textit{ and } C \equiv \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

Write down the linear equations given by $AX = C$ and solve for x, y, z by the matrix method.

Solution. $$AX = C$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 3 & -1 & 1 \\ 4 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$X = A^{-1} . C$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 3 & -1 & 1 \\ 4 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}^{-1} \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\text{Matrix of co-factors of } A = \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 1 & 10 \\ 4 & -11 & 6 \\ 5 & 8 & -7 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$|A| = 1\,(-3) + 2\,(1) + 3\,(10) = -3 + 2 + 30 = 29$$

$$\text{Adj. } A = \begin{bmatrix} -3 & 4 & 5 \\ 1 & -11 & 8 \\ 10 & 6 & -7 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^{-1} = \frac{1}{|A|}\, Adj.\, A = \frac{1}{29}\begin{bmatrix} -3 & 4 & 5 \\ 1 & -11 & 8 \\ 10 & 6 & -7 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$X = A^{-1} C$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{29}\begin{bmatrix} -3 & 4 & 5 \\ 1 & -11 & 8 \\ 10 & 6 & -7 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{29}\begin{bmatrix} -3 & +8 & +15 \\ 1 & -22 & +24 \\ 10 & +12 & -21 \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{29}\begin{bmatrix} 20 \\ 3 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{20}{29} \\ \frac{3}{29} \\ \frac{1}{29} \end{bmatrix}$$

Hence, $x = \dfrac{20}{29}$, $y = \dfrac{3}{29}$, $z = \dfrac{1}{29}$ **Ans.**

Example 29. *By the method of matrix, inversion, solve the system.*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 2 & 5 & 7 \\ 2 & 1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x & u \\ y & v \\ z & w \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 9 & 2 \\ 52 & 15 \\ 0 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Solution. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 2 & 5 & 7 \\ 2 & 1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x & u \\ y & v \\ z & w \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 9 & 2 \\ 52 & 15 \\ 0 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$

$$\begin{bmatrix} x & u \\ y & v \\ z & w \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 2 & 5 & 7 \\ 2 & 1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}^{-1}\begin{bmatrix} 9 & 2 \\ 52 & 15 \\ 0 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \frac{-1}{4}\begin{bmatrix} -12 & 2 & 2 \\ 16 & -3 & -5 \\ -8 & 1 & 3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 9 & 2 \\ 52 & 15 \\ 0 & -1 \end{bmatrix} = \frac{-1}{4}\begin{bmatrix} -4 & 4 \\ -12 & -8 \\ -20 & -4 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 \\ 3 & 2 \\ 5 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$x = 1$, $u = -1$
$y = 3$, $v = 2$
$z = 5$, $w = 1$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 20.3

Solve the following equations

1. $3x + y + 2z = 3,\ 2x - 3y - z = -3,\ x + 2y + z = 4$ (*A.M.I.E. Winter* 2001)
Ans. $x = 1,\ y = 2,\ z = -1$

2. $x + 2y + 3z = 1,\ 2x + 3y + 8z = 2,\ x + y + z = 3$ **Ans.** $x = \dfrac{9}{2},\ y = -1,\ z = -\dfrac{1}{2}$

3. $4x + 2y - z = 9,\ x - y + 3z = -4,\ 2x + z = 1$ **Ans.** $x = 1,\ y = 2,\ z = -1$

4. $5x + 3y + 3z = 48,\ 2x + 6y - 3z = 18,\ 8x - 3y + 2z = 21$ **Ans.** $x = 3,\ y = 5,\ z = 6$

5. $x + y + z = 6,\ x - y + 2z = 5,\ 3x + y + z = 8$ **Ans.** $x = 1,\ y = 2,\ z = 3$

6. $x + 2y + 3z = 1,\ 3x - 2y + z = 2,\ 4x + 2y + z = 3$ **Ans.** $x = \frac{7}{10}, y = \frac{3}{40}, z = \frac{1}{20}$

7. $9x + 4y + 3z = -1,\ 5x + y + 2z = 1,\ 7x + 3y + 4z = 1$ **Ans.** $x = 0, y = -1, z = 1$

8. $x + y + z = 8,\ x - y + 2z = 6,\ 9x + 5y - 7z = 14$ **Ans.** $x = 5, y = \frac{5}{3}, z = \frac{4}{3}$

9. $3x + 2y + 4z = 7,\ 2x + y + z = 4,\ x + 3y + 5z = 2$ **Ans.** $x = \frac{9}{4}, y = -\frac{9}{8}, z = \frac{5}{8}$

10. Represent each of the transformations
$x_1 = 3y_1 + 2y_2,\ x_2 = -y_1 + 4y_2$ and $y_1 = z_1 + 2z_2,\ y_2 = -3z_1$
by the use of matrices, find the composite transformation which expresses x_1, x_2 in terms of z_1, z_2. **Ans.** $x_1 = -3z_1 + 6z_2,\ x_2 = -13z_1 - 2z_2$

20.10 PARTITIONING OF MATRICES

Sub matrix. A matrix obtained by deleting some of the rows and columns of a matrix A is said to be sub matrix.

For example, $A = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & 1 & 0 \\ 5 & 2 & 1 \\ 6 & 3 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$, then $\begin{bmatrix} 4 & 1 \\ 5 & 2 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 5 & 2 \\ 6 & 3 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ are the sub matrices.

Partitioning: A matrix may be subdivided into sub matrices by drawing lines parallel to its rows and columns. These sub matrices may be considered as the elements of the original matrix.

For example,
$$A = \left[\begin{array}{cc:ccc} 2 & 1 & 0 & 4 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 2 & 3 & 4 \\ \hdashline 4 & 5 & 1 & 6 & 5 \end{array}\right]$$

$$A_{11} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}, \qquad A_{12} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 4 & 1 \\ 2 & 3 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$$
$$A_{21} = [4 \;\; 5], \qquad A_{22} = [1 \;\; 6 \;\; 5]$$

Then we may write
$$A = \begin{bmatrix} A_{11} & A_{12} \\ A_{21} & A_{22} \end{bmatrix}$$

So, the matrix is partitioned. The dotted lines divide the matrix into sub-matrices. $A_{11}, A_{12}, A_{21}, A_{22}$ are the sub-matrices but behave like elements of the original matrix A. The matrix A can be partitioned in several ways.

Addition by submatrices: Let A and B be two matrices of the same order and are partitioned identically.

For example;

$$A = \left[\begin{array}{ccc:c} 2 & 3 & 4 & 5 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & 3 \\ \hdashline 3 & 4 & 5 & 6 \\ \hdashline 4 & 5 & 0 & 1 \end{array}\right] \qquad B = \left[\begin{array}{ccc:c} 3 & 1 & 4 & 6 \\ 2 & 1 & 0 & 4 \\ \hdashline 4 & 5 & 1 & 2 \\ \hdashline 1 & 3 & 4 & 5 \end{array}\right]$$

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} A_{11} & A_{12} \\ A_{21} & A_{22} \\ A_{31} & A_{32} \end{bmatrix}, \quad B = \begin{bmatrix} B_{11} & B_{12} \\ B_{21} & B_{22} \\ B_{31} & B_{32} \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A + B = \begin{bmatrix} A_{11} + B_{11} & A_{12} + B_{12} \\ A_{21} + B_{21} & A_{22} + B_{22} \\ A_{31} + B_{31} & A_{32} + B_{32} \end{bmatrix}$$

20.11 MULTIPLICATION BY SUB-MATRICES

Two matrices A and B, which are conformable to the product AB are partitioned in such a way that the columns of A partitioned in the same way as the rows of B are partitioned. But the rows of A and columns of B can be partitioned in any way.

For example, Here A is a 3×4 matrix and B is 4×3 matrix.

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & \vdots & 4 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & \vdots & 3 \\ 1 & 4 & 1 & \vdots & 2 \end{bmatrix} \text{ and } B = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & 5 & 6 \\ 3 & 2 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 4 \\ \cdots & \cdots & \cdots \\ 2 & 5 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

The partitioning of the columns of A is the same as the partitioning of the rows of B. Here, A is partitioned after third column, B has been partitioned after third row.

Example 30. *If C and D are two non-singular matrices, show that if*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} C & 0 \\ 0 & D \end{bmatrix}, \quad \textit{then } A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} C^{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & D^{-1} \end{bmatrix}$$

Solution. Let $$A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} E & F \\ G & H \end{bmatrix} \qquad ...(1)$$

Then $$AA^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} C & 0 \\ 0 & D \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} E & F \\ G & H \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} CE + 0G & CF + 0H \\ 0E + DG & 0F + DH \end{bmatrix}$$

So that $$\begin{bmatrix} CE + 0G & CF + 0H \\ 0E + DG & 0F + DH \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} I & 0 \\ 0 & I \end{bmatrix}$$

$$CE + 0G = I \Rightarrow CE = I$$
$$CF + 0H = 0 \Rightarrow CF = 0$$
$$0E + DG = 0 \Rightarrow DG = 0$$
$$OF + DH = I \Rightarrow DH = I$$

Since, C is non singular and $CF = 0, \quad \therefore F = 0$

$CE = I \Rightarrow E = C^{-1}$

Similarly, D is non singular and $DG = 0 \Rightarrow G = 0$ and $DH = I \Rightarrow H = D^{-1}$

Putting these values in (1), we get

$$A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} C^{-1} & 0 \\ 0 & D^{-1} \end{bmatrix}$$ **Proved.**

Inverse By Partitioning: Let the matrix B be the inverse of the matrix A. Matrices A and B are partitioned as

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} A_{11} & A_{12} \\ A_{21} & A_{22} \end{bmatrix}, \quad B = \begin{bmatrix} B_{11} & B_{12} \\ B_{21} & B_{22} \end{bmatrix}$$

Since, $$AB = BA = I$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} A_{11} & A_{12} \\ A_{21} & A_{22} \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} B_{11} & B_{12} \\ B_{21} & B_{22} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} B_{11} & B_{12} \\ B_{21} & B_{22} \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} A_{11} & A_{12} \\ A_{21} & A_{22} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} I & 0 \\ 0 & I \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} A_{11} B_{11} + A_{12} B_{21} & A_{11} B_{12} + A_{12} B_{22} \\ A_{21} B_{11} + A_{22} B_{21} & A_{21} B_{12} + A_{22} B_{22} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} B_{11} A_{11} + B_{12} A_{21} & B_{11} A_{12} + B_{12} A_{22} \\ B_{21} A_{11} + B_{22} A_{21} & B_{21} A_{12} + B_{22} A_{22} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} I & 0 \\ 0 & I \end{bmatrix}$$

Let us solve the equations for B_{11}, B_{12}, B_{21} and B_{22}.

Let, $\quad B_{22} = M^{-1}$

From (2), $\quad B_{12} = -A_{11}^{-1}(A_{22} B_{22}) = -(A_{11}^{-1} A_{22}) M^{-1}$

From (3), $\quad B_{21} = -(B_{22} A_{21}) A_{11}^{-1} = -M^{-1}(A_{21} A_{11}^{-1})$

From (1), $\quad B_{11} = A_{11}^{-1} - A_{11}^{-1}(A_{12} B_{21}) = A_{11}^{-1} - (A_{11}^{-1} A_{12}) B_{21}$

$$= A_{11}^{-1} + (A_{11}^{-1} A_{12}) M^{-1} (A_{21} A_{11}^{-1})$$

Here $\quad M = A_{22} - A_{21}\,(A_{11}^{-1} A_{22})$

Note: A is usually taken of order $n - 1$.

Example 31. *Find the inverse of the following matrix by partitioning*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 3 \\ 1 & 4 & 3 \\ 1 & 3 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$$

Solution. Let the matrix be partitioned into four submatrices as follows:

Let $\quad A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 3 \\ 1 & 4 & 3 \\ 1 & 3 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$

$$A_{11} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 \\ 1 & 4 \end{bmatrix};\; A_{12} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A_{21} = [1 \quad 3];\; A_{22} = [4]$$

We have to find $A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} B_{11} & B_{12} \\ B_{21} & B_{22} \end{bmatrix}$ where

$$B_{11} = A_{11}^{-1} + (A_{11}^{-1} A_{12})(M^{-1})(A_{21} A_{11}^{-1})$$

$$B_{21} = -M^{-1}(A_{21} A_{11}^{-1})$$

$$B_{12} = -A_{11}^{-1} A_{12} M^{-1}\;;\; B_{22} = M^{-1}$$

and $\quad M = A_{22} - A_{21}(A_{11}^{-1} A_{12})$

Now

$$A_{11}^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix};\; A_{11}^{-1} A_{12} = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A_{21} A_{11}^{-1} = [1 \quad 3]\begin{bmatrix} 4 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = [1 \quad 0]$$

$$M = [4] - [1 - 3]\begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} = [4] - [3] = [1]$$

$$M^{-1} = [1]$$

$$\therefore \qquad B_{11} = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} [1 \quad 0] = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow B_{11} = \begin{bmatrix} 7 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$B_{21} = -[1][1 \quad 0] = -[1 \quad 0]$$

$$B_{12} = -\begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$B_{22} = [1]$$

$$A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} B_{11} & B_{12} \\ B_{21} & B_{22} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 7 & -3 & -3 \\ -1 & 1 & 0 \\ -1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

Example 32. *Find the inverse of* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & 3 & 2 \\ 2 & 4 & 3 & 3 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ *by partitioning.*

Solution. (*a*) Take $G_3 = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 1 & 3 & 3 \\ 2 & 4 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ and partition so that

$$A_{11} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 3 \end{bmatrix}, A_{12} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix}, A_{21} = [2 \quad 4], \text{ and } A_{22} = [3]$$

Now,
$$A_{11}^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -2 \\ -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}, \quad A_{11}^{-1} A_{12} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -2 \\ -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix},$$

$$A_{21} A_{11}^{-1} = [2 \quad 4] \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -2 \\ -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = [2 \quad 0]$$

$$M = A_{22} - A_{21}(A_{11}^{-1} A_{12}) = [3] - [2 \quad 4] \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} = [-3], \text{ And } M^{-1} = [-1/3]$$

Then

$$B_{11} = A_{11}^{-1} + (A_{11}^{-1} A_{12}) M^{-1} (A_{21} A_{11}^{-1}) = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -2 \\ -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \left[-\frac{1}{3} \right] [2 \quad 0] = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -2 \\ -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} - \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \frac{1}{3} \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -6 \\ -3 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$B_{12} = -(A_{11}^{-1} A_{12}) M^{-1} = \frac{1}{3} \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$B_{21} = -M^{-1}(A_{21} A_{11}^{-1}) = \frac{1}{3} [2 \quad 0]$$

$$B_{22} = M^{-1} = \left[-\frac{1}{3} \right]$$

and
$$G_3^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} B_{11} & B_{12} \\ B_{21} & B_{22} \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{3} \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -6 & 3 \\ -3 & 3 & 0 \\ 2 & 0 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*b*) Partition A so that $A_{11} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 1 & 3 & 3 \\ 2 & 4 & 3 \end{bmatrix}, A_{12} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix}, A_{21} = [1 \quad 1 \quad 1]$, and $A_{22} = [1]$.

Now, $A_{11}^{-1} = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -6 & 3 \\ -3 & 3 & 0 \\ 2 & 0 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$, $A_{11}^{-1} A_{12} = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 3 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}$, $A_{21} A_{11}^{-1} = \frac{1}{3}[2 \ \ -3 \ \ 2]$

$$M = [1] - [1 \ \ 1 \ \ 1]\left(\frac{1}{3}\right)\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 3 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix} = \left[\frac{1}{3}\right] \cdot \text{ and } M^{-1} = [3]$$

Then
$$B_{11} = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -6 & 3 \\ -3 & 3 & 0 \\ 2 & 0 & -1 \end{bmatrix} + \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 3 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}[3]\frac{1}{3}[2 \ \ -3 \ \ 2]$$
$$= \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -6 & 3 \\ -3 & 3 & 0 \\ 2 & 0 & -1 \end{bmatrix} + \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 6 & -9 & 6 \\ -2 & 3 & -2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & 1 \\ 1 & -2 & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$B_{12} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ -3 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}, \ B_{21} = [-2 \ \ 3 \ \ -2], \ B_{22} = [3]; \ A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} B_{11} & B_{12} \\ B_{21} & B_{22} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & -2 & 2 & -3 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 & 1 \\ -2 & 3 & -2 & 3 \end{bmatrix} \ \textbf{Ans.}$$

EXERCISE 20.4

1. Compute A + B using partitioning

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & 1 & 0 & 5 \\ 6 & 7 & 8 & 1 \\ 0 & 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}, \ B = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \textbf{Ans. } \begin{bmatrix} 7 & 3 & 1 & 6 \\ 7 & 7 & 9 & 2 \\ 2 & 3 & 3 & 2 \\ 1 & 3 & 2 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$$

2. Compute AB using partitioning

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 0 & 1 \\ 4 & 1 & 3 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & 3 & 0 \end{bmatrix}, \ B = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 4 \\ 4 & 1 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \textbf{Ans. } \begin{bmatrix} 4 & 6 & 11 \\ 24 & 18 & 18 \\ 16 & 10 & 12 \end{bmatrix}$$

3. Find the inverse of $\begin{bmatrix} A & B \\ C & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ where B, C are non-singular. **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & C^{-1} \\ B^{-1} & -B^{-1}AC^{-1} \end{bmatrix}$

Find the inverse of the following metrices by partitioning:

4. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & -1 \\ 1 & 3 & 2 \\ -1 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\frac{1}{10}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & -5 \\ 3 & -1 & 5 \\ -5 & 5 & -5 \end{bmatrix}$ **5.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -1 \\ -1 & 1 & 2 \\ 2 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\frac{1}{14}\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -1 & 5 \\ 5 & 3 & -1 \\ -1 & 5 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$

6. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3 & 4 \\ 4 & 3 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\frac{1}{5}\begin{bmatrix} -10 & 4 & 9 \\ 15 & -4 & -14 \\ -5 & 1 & 6 \end{bmatrix}$ **7.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 2 & 4 & 5 \\ 3 & 5 & 6 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -3 & 2 \\ -3 & 3 & -1 \\ 2 & -1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

8. $\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 4 & 2 & 7 \\ 2 & 3 & 3 & 2 \\ 52 & 7 & 3 & 9 \\ 2 & 3 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} -1 & 11 & 7 & -26 \\ -1 & -7 & -3 & 16 \\ 1 & 1 & -1 & 0 \\ 1 & -1 & -1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$

Choose the correct answer:

9. If $3x + 2y + z = 0$, $x + 4y + z = 0$, $2x + y + 4z = 0$, be a system of equations then

(*i*) System is inconsistent (*ii*) it has only trivial solution

(*iii*) it can be reduced to a single equation thus solution does not exist

(*iv*) Determinant of the coefficient matrix is zero. (*AMIETE, June 2010*) **Ans.** (*ii*)

CHAPTER

21

EIGEN VALUES, EIGEN VECTOR, CAYLEY HAMILTON THEOREM, DIAGONALISATION

(COMPLEX AND UNITARY MATRICES, APPLICATION)

21.1 INTRODUCTION

Eigen values and eigen vectors are used in the study of ordinary differential equations, analysing population growth and finding powers of matrices.

21.2 EIGEN VALUES

Let $$\begin{bmatrix} a_{11} & a_{12} & a_{13} & \cdots & a_{1n} \\ a_{21} & a_{22} & a_{23} & \cdots & a_{2n} \\ a_{31} & a_{32} & a_{33} & \cdots & a_{3n} \\ \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots \\ a_{n1} & a_{n2} & a_{n3} & \cdots & a_{nn} \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \\ \vdots \\ x_n \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} y_1 \\ y_2 \\ y_3 \\ \vdots \\ y_n \end{bmatrix}$$

$$AX = Y \qquad ...(1)$$

Where A is the matrix , X is the column vector and Y is also column vector.

Here column vector X is transformed into the column vector Y by means of the square matrix A.

Let X be a such vector which transforms into λX by means of the transformation (1). Suppose the linear transformation $Y = AX$ transforms X into a scalar multiple of itself i.e. λX.

$$AX = Y = \lambda X$$

$$AX - \lambda IX = 0$$

$$(A - \lambda I) X = 0 \qquad ...(2)$$

Thus the unknown scalar λ is known as an eigen value of the matrix A and the corresponding non zero vector X as **eigen vector.**

The eigen values are also called characteristic values or proper values or latent values.

Let $$A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 2 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A - \lambda I = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 2 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix} - \lambda \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2-\lambda & 2 & 1 \\ 1 & 3-\lambda & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 2-\lambda \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{characteristic matrix}$$

(*b*) **Characteristic Polynomial:** The determinant $| A - \lambda I |$ when expanded will give a polynomial, which we call as characteristic polynomial of matrix A.

For example; $\begin{vmatrix} 2-\lambda & 2 & 1 \\ 1 & 3-\lambda & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 2-\lambda \end{vmatrix}$

$$= (2-\lambda)(6-5\lambda+\lambda^2-2) - 2(2-\lambda-1) + 1(2-3+\lambda)$$
$$= -\lambda^3 + 7\lambda^2 - 11\lambda + 5$$

(*c*) **Characteristic Equation:** The equation $|A-\lambda I| = 0$ is called the characteristic equation of the matrix A *e.g.*

$$\lambda^3 - 7\lambda^2 + 11\lambda - 5 = 0$$

(*d*) **Characteristic Roots or Eigen Values:** The roots of characteristic equation $|A-\lambda I| = 0$ are called characteristic roots of matrix A. *e.g.*

$$\lambda^3 - 7\lambda^2 + 11\lambda - 5 = 0$$

$\Rightarrow \quad (\lambda-1)(\lambda-1)(\lambda-5) = 0 \qquad \therefore \lambda = 1, 1, 5$

Characteristic roots are 1, 1, 5.

Some Important Properties of Eigen Values

(*AMIETE, Dec. 2009*)

(1) Any square matrix A and its transpose A' have the same eigen values.

Note. The sum of the elements on the principal diagonal of a matrix is called the **trace** of the matrix.

(2) The sum of the eigen values of a matrix is equal to the **trace** of the matrix.

(3) The product of the eigen values of a matrix A is equal to the **determinant** of A.

(4) If $\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \ldots \lambda_n$ are the eigen values of A, then the eigen values of

(*i*) kA are $k\lambda_1, \; k\lambda_2, \; \ldots, \; k\lambda_n$ (*ii*) A^m are $\lambda_1^m, \lambda_2^m, \ldots\ldots, \lambda_n^m$

(*iii*) A^{-1} are $\dfrac{1}{\lambda_1}, \dfrac{1}{\lambda_2}, \ldots, \dfrac{1}{\lambda_n}$.

Example 1. *Find the characteristic roots of the matrix* $\begin{bmatrix} 6 & -2 & 2 \\ -2 & 3 & -1 \\ 2 & -1 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$

Solution. The characteristic equation of the given matrix is

$$\begin{vmatrix} 6-\lambda & -2 & 2 \\ -2 & 3-\lambda & -1 \\ 2 & -1 & 3-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$\Rightarrow \quad (6-\lambda)(9-6\lambda+\lambda^2-1) + 2(-6+2\lambda+2) + 2(2-6+2\lambda) = 0$

$\Rightarrow \quad -\lambda^3 + 12\lambda^2 - 36\lambda + 32 = 0$

By trial, $\lambda = 2$ is a root of this equation.

$\Rightarrow \quad (\lambda-2)(\lambda^2-10\lambda+16) = 0 \Rightarrow (\lambda-2)(\lambda-2)(\lambda-8) = 0$

$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda = 2, 2, 8$ are the characteristic roots or Eigen values. **Ans.**

Example 2. *Find the eigen values of the matrix :*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*R.G.P.V. Bhopal, I Semester, June 2007*)

Solution. Let $A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

The characteristic equation of A is

$$|A-\lambda I|=0$$

$$\begin{vmatrix} 2-\lambda & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2-\lambda & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1-\lambda \end{vmatrix}=0$$

Expanding the determinant with the help of third row, we have

$$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)\left[(2-\lambda)^2-1\right]=0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)\left(\lambda^2-4\lambda+4-1\right)=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)\left(\lambda^2-4\lambda+3\right)=0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)(\lambda-3)(\lambda-1)=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda=1,\ 1,\ 3$$

The eigen values of the given matrix are 1, 1 and 3. **Ans.**

Example 3. *The matrix A is defined as* $A=\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -3 \\ 0 & 3 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 \end{bmatrix}$

Find the eigen values of $3A^3+5A^2-6A+2I$.

Solution. $|A-\lambda I|=0$

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1-\lambda & 2 & -3 \\ 0 & 3-\lambda & 2 \\ 0 & 0 & -2-\lambda \end{vmatrix}=0$$

$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)(3-\lambda)(-2-\lambda)=0$ or $\lambda=1,\ 3,\ -2$

Eigen values of $A^3=1,\ 27,\ -8$; Eigen values of $A^2=1,\ 9,\ 4$

Eigen values of $A=1,\ 3,\ -2$; Eigen values of $I=1,\ 1,\ 1$

$\therefore$ Eigen values of $3A^3+5A^2-6A+2I$

First eigen value $=3(1)^3+5(1)^2-6(1)+2(1)=4$

Second eigen value $=3(27)+5(9)-6(3)+2(1)=110$

Third eigen value $=3(-8)+5(4)-6(-2)+2(1)=10$

Required eigen values are 4, 110, 10 **Ans.**

Example 4. *Show that for any square matrix A, the product of all the eigen values of A is equal to det (A), and the sum of all the eigen values of A is equal to the sum of the diagonal elements.* (*U.P., I Semester, Winter* 2003)

Solution. Let $A=\begin{bmatrix} a_{11} & a_{12} & a_{13} \\ a_{21} & a_{22} & a_{23} \\ a_{31} & a_{32} & a_{33} \end{bmatrix}$, $|A-\lambda I|=\begin{vmatrix} a_{11}-\lambda & a_{12} & a_{13} \\ a_{21} & a_{22}-\lambda & a_{23} \\ a_{31} & a_{32} & a_{33}-\lambda \end{vmatrix}$

$$\begin{aligned}|A-\lambda I| &= (a_{11}-\lambda)\left[(a_{22}-\lambda)(a_{33}-\lambda)-a_{32}a_{23}\right]-a_{12}\left[a_{21}(a_{33}-\lambda)-a_{31}a_{23}\right]+ \\ &\qquad a_{13}\left[a_{21}a_{32}-a_{31}(a_{22}-\lambda)\right] \\ &= (a_{11}-\lambda)\left[a_{22}a_{33}-(a_{22}+a_{33})\lambda+\lambda^2-a_{32}a_{23}\right]-a_{12}\left[a_{21}a_{33}-a_{21}\lambda-a_{31}a_{23}\right]+ \\ &\qquad a_{13}(a_{21}a_{32}-a_{31}a_{22}+a_{31}\lambda) \\ &= a_{11}a_{22}a_{33}+(-a_{11}a_{22}-a_{11}a_{33})\lambda+a_{11}\lambda^2-a_{11}a_{32}a_{23}+(-a_{22}a_{33}+a_{32}a_{23})\lambda+ \\ &\qquad (a_{22}+a_{33})\lambda^2-\lambda^3-a_{12}a_{21}a_{33}+a_{12}a_{31}a_{23}+a_{12}a_{21}\lambda+ \\ &\qquad a_{13}a_{21}a_{32}-a_{13}a_{31}a_{22}+a_{13}a_{31}\lambda \\ &= -\lambda^3+\lambda^2(a_{11}+a_{22}+a_{33})+\lambda(-a_{11}a_{22}-a_{11}a_{33}+a_{12}a_{21}-a_{22}a_{33}+a_{23}a_{32}+a_{13}a_{31}) \\ &\qquad -\left[a_{11}(a_{22}a_{33}-a_{23}a_{32})-a_{12}(a_{21}a_{33}-a_{23}a_{31})+a_{13}(a_{21}a_{32}-a_{31}a_{22})\right] \quad \ldots(1)\end{aligned}$$

If $\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \lambda_3$ be the roots of the equation (1) then
Sum of the roots = $\lambda_1 + \lambda_2 + \lambda_3 = a_{11} + a_{22} + a_{33}$ = Sum of the diagonal elements.
Product of the roots

$= \lambda_1\lambda_2\lambda_3 = [a_{11}(a_{22}a_{33} - a_{23}a_{32}) - a_{12}(a_{21}a_{33} - a_{23}a_{31}) + a_{13}(a_{21}a_{32} - a_{31}a_{22})]$
= Determinant A. **Proved.**

Example 5. *Let λ be an eigen value of a matrix A. Then prove that*

(*i*) $\lambda + k$ is an eigen value of $A + kI$

(*ii*) $k\lambda$ is an eigen value of kA. (*Gujarat, II Semester, June 2009*)

Solution. Here, A has eigen value λ. $\Rightarrow$ $|A - \lambda I| = 0$ ... (1)

(*ii*) Adding and subtracting kI from (1) we get

$|A + kI - \lambda I - kI| = 0$

$\Rightarrow$ $|(A + kI) - (\lambda + k)I| = 0$ $\Rightarrow$ $A + kI$ has $\lambda + k$ eigen value.

(*i*) Multiplying (1), by k, we get

$k|A - \lambda I| = 0$ $\Rightarrow$ $|kA - k\lambda I| = 0$

$\Rightarrow$ kA has eigen value $k\lambda$. **Proved.**

Example 6. *If $\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \ldots. \lambda_n$ are the eigen values of A, find the eigen values of the martrix $(A - \lambda I)^2$.*

Solution. $(A - \lambda I)^2 = A^2 - 2\lambda AI + \lambda^2 I^2 = A^2 - 2\lambda A + \lambda^2 I$

Eigen values of A^2 are $\lambda_1^2, \lambda_2^2, \lambda_3^3 \ldots \lambda_n^2$
Eigen values of $2\lambda A$ are $2\lambda\lambda_1$, $2\lambda\lambda_2$, $2\lambda\lambda_3 \ldots 2\lambda\lambda_n$.
Eigen values of $\lambda^2 I$ are λ^2.
$\therefore$ Eigen values of $A^2 - 2\lambda A + \lambda^2 I$

$$\lambda_1^2 - 2\lambda\lambda_1 + \lambda^2, \quad \lambda_2^2 - 2\lambda\lambda_2 + \lambda^2, \quad \lambda_3^2 - 2\lambda\lambda_3 + \lambda^2 \ldots\ldots$$

$\Rightarrow$ $$(\lambda_1 - \lambda)^2, \quad (\lambda_2 - \lambda)^2, \quad (\lambda_3 - \lambda)^2, \ldots (\lambda_n - \lambda)^2$$ **Ans.**

Example 7. *Prove that a matrix A and its transpose A′ have the same characteristic roots.*

Solution. Characteristic equation of matrix A is

$|A - \lambda I| = 0$ ... (1)

Characteristic equation of matrix A' is

$|A' - \lambda I| = 0$ ...(2)

Clearly both (1) and (2) are same, as we know that

$|A| = |A'|$

i.e., a determinant remains unchanged when rows be changed into columns and columns into rows. **Proved.**

Example 8. *If A and P be square matrices of the same type and if P be invertible, show that the matrices A and $P^{-1}AP$ have the same characteristic roots.*

Solution. Let us put $B = P^{-1}AP$ and we will show that characteristic equations for both A and B are the same and hence they have the same characteristic roots.

$B - \lambda I = P^{-1}AP - \lambda I = P^{-1}AP - P^{-1}\lambda IP = P^{-1}(A - \lambda I)P$

$\therefore$ $|B - \lambda I| = |P^{-1}(A - \lambda I)P| = |P^{-1}||A - \lambda I||P|$

$= |A - \lambda I||P^{-1}||P| = |A - \lambda I||P^{-1}P|$

$= |A - \lambda I||I| = |A - \lambda I|$ as $|I| = 1$

Thus the matrices A and B have the same characteristic equations and hence the same characteristic roots. **Proved.**

Example 9. *If A and B be two square invertible matrices, then prove that AB and BA have the same characteristic roots.*

Solution. Now $\quad AB = IAB = B^{-1}\,B\,(AB) = B^{-1}\,(BA)\,B \qquad ...(1)$

But by Ex. 8, matrices BA and $B^{-1}\,(BA)\,B$ have same characteristic roots or matrices BA and AB by (1) have same characteristic roots. **Proved.**

Example 10. *If A and B be n rowed square matrices and if A be invertible, show that the matrices $A^{-1}B$ and BA^{-1} have the same characteristics roots.*

Solution. $\quad A^{-1}\,B = A^{-1}\,BI = A^{-1}\,B\,(A^{-1}A) = A^{-1}\,(BA^{-1})\,A. \qquad ...(1)$

But by Ex. 8, matrices BA^{-1} and $A^{-1}\,(BA^{-1})A$ have same characteristic roots or matrices BA^{-1} and $A^{-1}\,B$ by (1) have same characteristic roots. **Proved.**

Example 11. *Show that 0 is a characteristic root of a matrix, if and only if, the matrix is singular.*

Solution. Characteristic equation of matrix A is given by

$$|A - \lambda I| = 0$$

If $\lambda = 0$, then from above it follows that $|A| = 0$ *i.e.* Matrix A is singular.

Again if Matrix A is singular *i.e.*, $|A| = 0$ then

$$|A - \lambda I| = 0 \;\Rightarrow\; |A| - \lambda\,|I| = 0,\; 0 - \lambda \cdot 1 = 0 \;\Rightarrow\; \lambda = 0.$$ **Proved.**

Example 12. *Show that characteristic roots of a triangular matrix are just the diagonal elements of the matrix.*

Solution. Let us consider the triangular matrix.

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} a_{11} & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ a_{21} & a_{22} & 0 & 0 \\ a_{31} & a_{32} & a_{33} & 0 \\ a_{41} & a_{42} & a_{43} & a_{44} \end{bmatrix}$$

Characteristic equation is $|A - \lambda I| = 0$

or
$$\begin{vmatrix} a_{11}-\lambda & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ a_{21} & a_{22}-\lambda & 0 & 0 \\ a_{31} & a_{32} & a_{33}-\lambda & 0 \\ a_{41} & a_{42} & a_{43} & a_{44}-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

On expansion it gives

$$(a_{11} - \lambda)\,(a_{22} - \lambda)\,(a_{33} - \lambda)\,(a_{44} - \lambda) = 0$$

$$\therefore \qquad \lambda = a_{11},\; a_{22},\; a_{33},\; a_{44}$$

which are diagonal elements of matrix A. **Proved.**

Example 13. *If λ is an eigen value of an orthogonal matrix, then $\frac{1}{\lambda}$ is also eigen value.*

[Hint: $AA' = I$ if λ is the eigen value of A, then $\lambda^2 = 1,\quad \lambda = \frac{1}{\lambda}$]

Example 14. *Find the eigen values of the orthogonal matrix.*

$$B = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & -2 \\ 2 & -2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Solution. The characteristic equation of

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1 & -2 \\ 2 & -2 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{is} \quad \begin{vmatrix} 1-\lambda & 2 & 2 \\ 2 & 1-\lambda & -2 \\ 2 & -2 & 1-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)\left[(1-\lambda)(1-\lambda)-4\right]-2\left[2(1-\lambda)+4\right]+2\left[-4-2(1-\lambda)\right]=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)\,(1-2\lambda+\lambda^2-4)-2(2-2\lambda+4)+2\,(-4-2+2\lambda)=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda^3-3\lambda^2-9\lambda+27=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (\lambda-3)^2(\lambda+3)=0$$

The eigen values of A are 3, 3, –3, so the eigen values of $B=\frac{1}{3}A$ are 1, 1, –1.

Note. If $\lambda = 1$ is an eigen value of B then its reciprocal $\frac{1}{\lambda}=\frac{1}{1}=1$ is also an eigen value of B. **Ans.**

EXERCISE 21.1

Show that, for any square matrix A.

1. If λ be an eigen value of a non singular matrix A, show that $\frac{|A|}{\lambda}$ is an eigen value of the matrix adj A.
2. There are infinitely many eigen vectors corresponding to a single eigen value.
3. Find the product of the eigen values of the matrix $\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -3 & 3 \\ 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 5 & 6 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 18
4. Find the sum of the eigen values of the matrix $\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 2 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & 2 \\ 4 & 1 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 11
5. Find the eigen value of the inverse of the matrix $\begin{bmatrix} 4 & 6 & 6 \\ 1 & 3 & 2 \\ -1 & -4 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $-1, 1, \frac{1}{4}$
6. Find the eigen values of the square of the matrix $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 1, 4, 9
7. Find the eigen values of the matrix $\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & 2 & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 5 \end{bmatrix}^3$ **Ans.** 8, 27, 125
8. The sum and product of the eigen values of the matrix $A=\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 2 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ are respectively

   (*a*) 7 and 7 (*b*) 7 and 5 (*c*) 7 and 6 (*d*) 7 and 8 (*AMIETE, June 2010*) **Ans.** (*b*)

21.3 CAYLEY-HAMILTON THEOREM

Satement. Every square matrix satisfies its own characteristic equation.

If $|A-\lambda I|=(-1)^n\left(\lambda^n+a_1\lambda^{n-1}+a_2\lambda^{n-2}+\cdots+a_n\right)$ be the characteristic polynomial of $n \times n$ matrix $A = (a_{ij})$, then the matrix equation

$X^n+a_1X^{n-1}+a_2X^{n-2}+\ldots+a_nI=0$ is satisfied by $X = A$ *i.e.*,

$$A^n+a_1A^{n-1}+a_2A^{n-2}+\ldots+a_nI=0$$

Proof. Since the elements of the matrix $A - \lambda I$ are at most of the first degree in λ, the elements of adj. $(A - \lambda I)$ are at most degree $(n-1)$ in λ. Thus, adj. $(A - \lambda I)$ may be written as a matrix polynomial in λ, given by

$$Adj\left(A-\lambda I\right)=B_0\lambda^{n-1}+B_1\lambda^{n-2}+\ldots+B_{n-1}$$

where $B_0, B_1, \ldots, B_{n-1}$ are $n \times n$ matrices, their elements being polynomial in λ.
We know that

$$(A - \lambda I)\, Adj\,(A - \lambda I) = |A - \lambda I|\, I$$

$$(A - \lambda I)\left(B_0\lambda^{n-1} + B_1\lambda^{n-2} + \ldots + B_{n-1}\right) = (-1)^n \left(\lambda^n + a_1\lambda^{n-1} + \ldots + a_n\right) I$$

Equating coefficient of like power of λ on both sides, we get

$$-IB_0 = (-1)^n I$$

$$AB_0 - IB_1 = (-1)^n a_1 I$$

$$AB_1 - IB_2 = (-1)^n a_2 I$$

....

$$AB_{n-1} = (-1)^n a_n I$$

On multiplying the equation by $A^n, A^{n-1}, \ldots, I$ respectively and adding, we obtain

$$0 = (-1)^n \left[A^n + a_1 A^{n-1} + \ldots + a_n I\right]$$

Thus $\quad A^n + a_1 A^{n-1} + \ldots + a_n I = 0$

for example, Let A be square matrix and if

$$\lambda^3 - 2\lambda^2 + 3\lambda - 4 = 0 \qquad \ldots(1)$$

be its characteristic equation, then according to Cayley Hamilton Theorem (1) is satisfied by A.

$$A^3 - 2A^2 + 3A - 4I = 0 \qquad \ldots(2)$$

We can find out A^{-1} from (2). On premultiplying (2) by A^{-1}, we get

$$A^2 - 2A + 3I - 4A^{-1} = 0$$

$$A^{-1} = \frac{1}{4}\left[A^2 - 2A + 3I\right]$$

Example 15. *Verify Cayley-Hamilton theorem for the matrix*

$$A = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 2 & -1 \end{pmatrix} \text{ and hence find } A^{-1}.$$ (*U.P.,I Sem., Dec 2008*)

Solution. The characteristic equation of the matrix is $|A - \lambda I| = 0$

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1-\lambda & 2 \\ 2 & -1-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$(1-\lambda)(-1-\lambda) - 4 = 0 \Rightarrow -1 + \lambda^2 - 4 = 0 \Rightarrow \lambda^2 - 5 = 0$$

By Cayley-Hamilton Theorem,

$$A^2 - 5I = 0 \qquad \ldots(1)$$

Now, $$A^2 = A.A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 5 & 0 \\ 0 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^2 - 5I = \begin{bmatrix} 5 & 0 \\ 0 & 5 \end{bmatrix} - 5\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 5 & 0 \\ 0 & 5 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} -5 & 0 \\ 0 & -5 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = 0 \qquad \ldots(2)$$

From (1) and (2), Cayley-Hamilton theorem is verified.
Again from (1), we have

$$A^2 - 5I = 0$$

Multiplying by A^{-1}, we get

$$A - 5A^{-1} = 0 \Rightarrow A^{-1} = \frac{1}{5}A \Rightarrow A^{-1} = \frac{1}{5}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{5} & \frac{2}{5} \\ \frac{2}{5} & -\frac{1}{5} \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

Example 16. *Find the characteristic equation of the matrix A.*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & 3 & 1 \\ 2 & 1 & -2 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Hence find A^{-1}. (*R.G.P.V., Bhopal, Feb. 2006*)

Solution Characteristic equation is

$$\begin{vmatrix} 4-\lambda & 3 & 1 \\ 2 & 1-\lambda & -2 \\ 1 & 2 & 1-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$(4-\lambda)\left[1+\lambda^2-2\lambda+4\right]-3(2-2\lambda+2)+1\cdot(4-1+\lambda)=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (4-\lambda)(\lambda^2-2\lambda+5)-3(-2\lambda+4)+(3+\lambda)=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad 4\lambda^2-8\lambda+20-\lambda^3+2\lambda^2-5\lambda+6\lambda-12+3+\lambda=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad -\lambda^3+6\lambda^2-6\lambda+11=0 \quad \text{or} \quad \lambda^3-6\lambda^2+6\lambda-11=0$$

By Cayley-Hamilton Theorem

$$A^3-6A^2+6A-11I=0 \qquad \text{...(1)}$$

Multiplying (1) by A^{-1}, we get

$$A^2-6A+6I-11A^{-1}=0 \quad \text{or} \quad 11A^{-1}=A^2-6A+6I$$

$$11A^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & 3 & 1 \\ 2 & 1 & -2 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 4 & 3 & 1 \\ 2 & 1 & -2 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix} - 6\begin{bmatrix} 4 & 3 & 1 \\ 2 & 1 & -2 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix} + 6\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 23 & 17 & -1 \\ 8 & 3 & -2 \\ 9 & 7 & -2 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} -24 & -18 & -6 \\ -12 & -6 & 12 \\ -6 & -12 & -6 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 6 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 6 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 6 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 5 & -1 & -7 \\ -4 & 3 & 10 \\ 3 & -5 & -2 \end{bmatrix}$$

$\therefore$ **Ans.**

$$A^{-1} = \frac{1}{11}\begin{bmatrix} 5 & -1 & -7 \\ -4 & 3 & 10 \\ 3 & -5 & -2 \end{bmatrix}$$

Example 17. *Find the characteristic equation of the matrix* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$

Verify Cayley Hamilton Theorem and hence prove that :

$$A^8-5A^7+7A^6-3A^5+A^4-5A^3+8A^2-2A+I = \begin{bmatrix} 8 & 5 & 5 \\ 0 & 3 & 0 \\ 5 & 5 & 8 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*Gujarat, II Semester, June 2009*)

Solution. Characteristic equation of the matrix A is

$$\begin{vmatrix} 2-\lambda & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1-\lambda & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 2-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (2-\lambda)[(1-\lambda)(2-\lambda)]-1(0)+1(0-1+\lambda)=0$$

$\Rightarrow \qquad \lambda^3 - 5\lambda^2 + 7\lambda - 3 = 0$

According to Cayley-Hamilton Theorem

$$A^3 - 5A^2 + 7A - 3I = 0 \qquad ...(1)$$

We have to verify the equation (1).

$$A^2 = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 5 & 4 & 4 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 4 & 4 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^3 = A^2.A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 5 & 4 & 4 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 4 & 4 & 5 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 14 & 13 & 13 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 13 & 13 & 14 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^3 - 5A^2 + 7A - 3I = \begin{bmatrix} 14 & 13 & 13 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 13 & 13 & 14 \end{bmatrix} - 5\begin{bmatrix} 5 & 4 & 4 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 4 & 4 & 5 \end{bmatrix} + 7\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix} - 3\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 14-25+14-3 & 13-20+7+0 & 13-20+7+0 \\ 0+0+0+0 & 1-5+7-3 & 0-0+0-0 \\ 13-20+7+0 & 13-20+7-0 & 14-25+14-3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = 0$$

Hence Cayley Hamilton Theorem is verified.

Now, $A^8 - 5A^7 + 7A^6 - 3A^5 + A^4 - 5A^3 + 8A^2 - 2A + I$

$$= A^5\left(A^3 - 5A^2 + 7A - 3I\right) + A\left(A^3 - 5A^2 + 7A - 3I\right) + A^2 + A + I$$

$$= A^5 \times O + A \times O + A^2 + A + I \quad = A^2 + A + I$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 5 & 4 & 4 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 4 & 4 & 5 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 5+2+1 & 4+1+0 & 4+1+0 \\ 0+0+0 & 1+1+1 & 0+0+0 \\ 4+1+0 & 4+1+0 & 5+2+1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 8 & 5 & 5 \\ 0 & 3 & 0 \\ 5 & 5 & 8 \end{bmatrix}$$

Proved.

21.4 POWER OF MATRIX (by Cayley Hamilton Theorem)

Any positive integral power A^m of matrix A is linearly expressible in terms of those of lower degree, where m is a positive integer and n is the degree of characteristic equation such that $m > n$.

Example 18. *Find A^4 with the help of Cayley Hamilton Theorem, if*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

Solution. Here, we have

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

Characteristic equation of the matrix A is

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1-\lambda & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2-\lambda & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0 \quad \begin{array}{l} \Rightarrow \quad \lambda^3 - 6\lambda^2 - 11\lambda - 6 = 0 \\ \Rightarrow \quad (\lambda-1)(\lambda-2)(\lambda-3) = 0 \end{array}$$

Eigen values of A are 1, 2, 3.

Let $\lambda^4 = \left(\lambda^3 - 6\lambda^2 - 11\lambda - 6\right)Q(\lambda) + \left(a\lambda^2 + b\lambda + c\right) = 0$ ...(1)

(where Q (λ) is quotient)

Put $\lambda = 1$ in (1), $(1)^4 = a + b + c \quad \Rightarrow \quad a + b + c = 1$ ...(2)

Put $\lambda = 2$ in (1), $(2)^4 = 4a + 2b + c \quad \Rightarrow \quad 4a + 2b + c = 16$ ... (3)

Put $\lambda = 3$ in (1), $(3)^4 = 9a + 3b + c \quad \Rightarrow \quad 9a + 3b + c = 81$ ... (4)

Solving (2), (3) and (4), we get

$a = 25, \quad b = -60, \quad c = 36$

Replacing λ by matrix A in (1), we get

$$A^4 = \left(A^3 - 6A^2 + 11A - 6\right)Q(A) + \left(aA^2 + bA + c\right)$$

$$= O + aA^2 + bA + cI = 25A^2 - 60A + 36I$$

$$= 25\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix} + (-60)\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix} + 36\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} -25 & -50 & -100 \\ 125 & 150 & 100 \\ 250 & 250 & 225 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} -60 & 0 & 60 \\ -60 & -120 & -60 \\ -120 & -120 & -180 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 36 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 36 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 36 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} -25-60+36 & -50+0+0 & -100+60+0 \\ 125-60+0 & 150-120+36 & 100-60+0 \\ 250-120+0 & 250-120+0 & 225-180+36 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -49 & -50 & -40 \\ 65 & 66 & 40 \\ 130 & 130 & 81 \end{bmatrix}$$

(It is also solved by diagonalization method on page 496 Example 38.)

EXERCISE 21.2

1. Find the characteristic polynomial of the matrix

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 1 & 1 \\ -1 & 5 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

Verify Cayley-Hamilton Theorem for this matrix. Hence find A^{-1}. **Ans.** $A^{-1} = \frac{1}{20}\begin{bmatrix} 7 & -2 & -3 \\ 1 & 4 & 1 \\ -2 & 2 & 8 \end{bmatrix}$

2. Use Cayley-Hamilton Theorem to find the inverse of the matrix

$$\begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta & \sin\theta \\ -\sin\theta & \cos\theta \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta & -\sin\theta \\ \sin\theta & \cos\theta \end{bmatrix}$

3. Using Cayley-Hamilton Theorem, find A^{-1}, given that

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & -1 & 3 \\ 1 & 0 & 2 \\ 4 & -2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.** $-\frac{1}{5}\begin{bmatrix} 4 & -5 & -2 \\ 7 & -10 & -1 \\ -2 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

4. Find the characteristic equation of the matrix

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 7 \\ 4 & 2 & 3 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$ (*R.G.P.V., Bhopal, Summer 2004*)

and show that the equation is also satisfied by A. **Ans.** $\lambda^3 - 4\lambda^2 - 20\lambda - 35 = 0$

5. Using, Cayley-Hamilton Theorem obtain the inverse of the matrix
$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 1 & 3 & -3 \\ -2 & -4 & -4 \end{bmatrix}$$ (*R.G.P.V. Bhopal, I Sem., 2003*) **Ans.** $\frac{1}{8}\begin{bmatrix} 24 & 8 & 12 \\ -10 & -2 & -6 \\ -2 & -2 & -2 \end{bmatrix}$

6. Show that the matrix $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & 2 \\ 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & -1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$

satisfies its characteristic equation. Hence find A^{-1}. **Ans.** $\frac{1}{9}\begin{bmatrix} 7 & 2 & -10 \\ -2 & 2 & -1 \\ -1 & 1 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$

7. Verify Cayley-Hamilton Theorem for the matrix
$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 2 \\ 3 & 1 & 1 \\ 2 & 3 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Hence evaluate A^{-1}. **Ans.** $\frac{1}{11}\begin{bmatrix} -2 & 5 & -1 \\ -1 & -3 & 5 \\ 7 & -1 & -2 \end{bmatrix}$

8. Verify Cayley-Hamilton theorem for the matrix
$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & 3 \\ 2 & 4 & -2 \\ -1 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$$

9. Find adj. A by using Cayley-Hamilton thmeorem where A is given by
$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 \\ 3 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$ (*R.G.P.V., Bhopal, April 2010*) **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & -3 & -3 \\ -3 & -2 & 1 \\ -3 & 7 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

10. If a matrix $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$, find the matrix A^{32}, using Cayley Hamilton Theorem. **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 32 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

21.5 CHARACTERISTIC VECTORS OR EIGEN VECTORS

As we have discussed in Art 21.2,

A column vector X is transformed into column vector Y by means of a square matrix A.

Now we want to multiply the column vector X by a scalar quantity λ so that we can find the same transformed column vector Y.

i.e., $\quad AX = \lambda X$

X is known as eigen vector.

Example 19. *Show that the vector (1, 1, 2) is an eigen vector of the matrix*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 1 & -1 \\ 2 & 2 & -1 \\ 2 & 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix} \text{ corresponding to the eigen value 2.}$$

Solution. Let $X = (1, 1, 2)$.

Now, $$AX = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 1 & -1 \\ 2 & 2 & -1 \\ 2 & 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 3+1-2 \\ 2+2-2 \\ 2+2+0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ 2 \\ 4 \end{bmatrix} = 2\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix} = 2X$$

Corresponding to each characteristic root λ, we have a corresponding non-zero vector X which satisfies the equation $[A - \lambda I]X = 0$. The non-zero vector X is called characteristic vector or Eigen vector.

21.6 PROPERTIES OF EIGEN VECTORS

1. The eigen vector X of a matrix A is not unique.
2. If $\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \ldots, \lambda_n$ be distinct eigen values of an $n \times n$ matrix then corresponding eigen vectors $X_1, X_2, \ldots\ldots, X_n$ form a linearly independent set.
3. If two or more eigen values are equal it may or may not be possible to get linearly independent eigen vectors corresponding to the equal roots.
4. Two eigen vectors X_1 and X_2 are called orthogonal vectors if $X_1' X_2 = 0$.
5. Eigen vectors of a symmetric matrix corresponding to different eigen values are orthogonal.

Normalised form of vectors. To find normalised form of $\begin{bmatrix} a \\ b \\ c \end{bmatrix}$, we divide each element by $\sqrt{a^2+b^2+c^2}$.

For example, normalised form of $\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix}$ is $\begin{bmatrix} 1/3 \\ 2/3 \\ 2/3 \end{bmatrix}$ $\qquad \left[\sqrt{1^2+2^2+2^2} = 3\right]$

21.7 ORTHOGONAL VECTORS

Two vectors X and Y are said to be orthogonal if $X_1^T X_2 = X_2^T X_1 = 0$.

Example 20. *Determine whether the eigen vectors of the matrix*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

are orthogonal.

Solution. Characteristic equation is

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1-\lambda & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2-\lambda & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)[(2-\lambda)(3-\lambda)-2]-0-1[2-2(2-\lambda)] = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)(6-5\lambda+\lambda^2-2)-(2-4+2\lambda) = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad (\lambda-1)(\lambda^2-5\lambda+4)+2(\lambda-1) = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)(\lambda^2-5\lambda+4)-2(\lambda-1) = 0 \qquad \Rightarrow \quad (\lambda-1)[\lambda^2-5\lambda+4+2] = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (\lambda-1)(\lambda^2-5\lambda+6) = 0 \qquad \Rightarrow \quad (\lambda-1)(\lambda-2)(\lambda-3) = 0$$

So, $\lambda = 1, 2, 3$ are three distinct eigen values of A.

For $\lambda = 1$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1-\lambda & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2-\lambda & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3-\lambda \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} 1-1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2-1 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3-1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad x_3 = 0$$

$$x_1 + x_2 + x_3 = 0 \Rightarrow x_2 = -x_3 - x_1$$

Let $x_1 = k$ then $x_2 = 0 - k = -k$

$$X_1 = \begin{bmatrix} k \\ -k \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad X_1 = k\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

For $\lambda = 2$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1-2 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2-2 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3-2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 0 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad x_1 + 0x_2 + x_3 = 0$$
$$2x_1 + 2x_2 + x_3 = 0$$

$$\frac{x_1}{0-2} = \frac{x_2}{2-1} = \frac{x_3}{2-0} = k$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad x_1 = 2k, \quad x_2 = -k, \quad x_3 = -2k$$

$$X_2 = k\begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ -1 \\ -2 \end{bmatrix}$$

For $\lambda = 3$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1-3 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2-3 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3-3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} -2 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\left.\begin{aligned} -2x_1 + 0x_2 - x_3 &= 0 \\ x_1 - x_2 + x_3 &= 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \frac{x_1}{0-1} = \frac{x_2}{-1+2} = \frac{x_3}{2-0} = k$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad x_1 = k, \quad x_2 = -k, \quad x_3 = -2k$$

$$X_3 = \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} k \\ -k \\ -2k \end{bmatrix} = k\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ -2 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$X'_1X_2 = [1, -1, 0]\begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ -1 \\ -2 \end{bmatrix} = 3, \quad X'_2X_3 = [2, -1, -2]\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ -2 \end{bmatrix} = 7, \quad X_3'X_1 = [1, -1, -2]\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} = 2$$

Since $X_1^T X_2 = 3 \neq 0, \quad X_2^T X_3 = 7 \neq 0, \quad X_3^T X_1 = 2 \neq 0$

Thus, there are three distinct eigen vectors. So X_1, X_2, X_3 are not orthogonal eigen vectors.

21.8 NON-SYMMETRIC MATRICES WITH NON-REPEATED EIGEN VALUES

Example 21. *Show that if $\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \ldots\ldots, \lambda_n$ be the eigen values of the matrix A, then A^n has the eigen values ${\lambda^n}_1, {\lambda^n}_2, \ldots\ldots{\lambda^n}_n$.*

Solution. Let λ be an eigen value of the matrix A.

Therefore, $$AX = \lambda X \qquad \ldots(1)$$

By premultiplying both sides of (1) by A^{n-1}, we get

$$A^{n-1}(AX) = A^{n-1}(\lambda X) \quad \Rightarrow \quad A^n X = \lambda(A^{n-1}X) \qquad \ldots(2)$$

But $\quad A^2X = A(AX) = A(\lambda X)$

$$= \lambda(AX) = \lambda(\lambda X) = \lambda^2 X \qquad \text{(From (1) } AX = \lambda X\text{)}$$

$$A^3X = A(A^2X) = \lambda(\lambda^2 X) = \lambda^3 X$$

Similarly, $A^4X = \lambda^4 X$

....

....

$A^nX = \lambda^n X$

$\Rightarrow$ λ^n is an eigen value of A^n.

Hence, if $\lambda_1, \lambda_2, ...\lambda_n$ be the eigen values of A, then $\lambda_1^n, \lambda_2^n, \lambda_3^n, ...\lambda_n^n$ be the eigen values of A^n.

Example 22. *If λ be an eigen value of matrix A (non-zero matrix), show that λ^{-1} is an eigen value of A^{-1}.*

Solution. We have, λ is an eigen value of matrix A.

$$AX = \lambda X \qquad ... (1)$$

where X is eigen vector

Premultiplying both sides of (1) by A^{-1}, we get

$$A^{-1}(AX) = A^{-1}(\lambda X) \quad \Rightarrow \quad (A^{-1}A)X = \lambda(A^{-1}X)$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad IX = \lambda(A^{-1}X) \quad \Rightarrow \quad X = \lambda(A^{-1}X)$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{1}{\lambda}X = A^{-1}X \quad \Rightarrow \quad A^{-1}X = \lambda^{-1}X$$

Hence, λ^{-1} is an eigen value of A^{-1}. **Proved.**

Example 23. *Find the eigen value and corresponding eigen vectors of the matrix*

$$A = \begin{pmatrix} -5 & 2 \\ 2 & -2 \end{pmatrix}$$ (*U.P.I Sem., Dec 2008*)

Solution. $|A - \lambda I| = 0$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{vmatrix} -5-\lambda & 2 \\ 2 & -2-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0 \Rightarrow (-5-\lambda)(-2-\lambda) - 4 = 0$$

$\Rightarrow$ $\lambda^2 + 7\lambda + 10 - 4 = 0 \Rightarrow \lambda^2 + 7\lambda + 6 = 0$

$(\lambda + 1)(\lambda + 6) = 0 \Rightarrow \lambda = -1, -6$

The eigen values of the given matrix are -1 and -6.

(*i*) When $\lambda = -1$, the corresponding eigen vectors are given by

$$\begin{bmatrix} -5+1 & 2 \\ 2 & -2+1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} -4 & 2 \\ 2 & -1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$\Rightarrow$ $2x_1 - x_2 = 0 \Rightarrow x_1 = \frac{1}{2}x_2$

Let $x_1 = k$, then $x_2 = 2k$, Hence, eigen vector $X_1 = \begin{bmatrix} k \\ 2k \end{bmatrix}$

(*ii*) When $\lambda = -6$, the corresponding eigen vectors are given by

$$\begin{bmatrix} -5+6 & 2 \\ 2 & -2+6 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 \\ 2 & 4 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$\Rightarrow$ $x_1 + 2x_2 = 0$ $\qquad \Rightarrow x_1 = -2x_2$

Let $x_1 = k_1$, then $x_2 = -\frac{1}{2}k_1$

Hence eigen vector $X_2 = \begin{bmatrix} k_1 \\ -\frac{k_1}{2} \end{bmatrix}$ or $\begin{bmatrix} 2k_1 \\ -k_1 \end{bmatrix}$

Hence eigen vectors are $\begin{bmatrix} k \\ 2k \end{bmatrix}$ and $\begin{bmatrix} 2k_1 \\ -k_1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.**

Example 24. *Find the eigen values and eigen vectors of matrix* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & 2 & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$

(*AMIETE, June 2010, 2009*)

Solution. $|A - \lambda I| = \begin{vmatrix} 3-\lambda & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & 2-\lambda & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 5-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = (3-\lambda)(2-\lambda)(5-\lambda)$

Hence the characteristic equation of matrix A is given by

$$|A - \lambda I| = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad (3-\lambda)(2-\lambda)(5-\lambda) = 0$$

$\therefore \quad \lambda = 2, 3, 5.$

Thus the eigen values of matrix A are 2, 3, 5.

The eigen vectors of the matrix A corresponding to the eigen value λ is given by the non-zero solution of the equation $(A - \lambda I)X = 0$

or
$$\begin{bmatrix} 3-\lambda & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & 2-\lambda & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 5-\lambda \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \ldots (1)$$

When $\lambda = 2$**,** the corresponding eigen vector is given by

$$\begin{bmatrix} 3-2 & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & 2-2 & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 5-2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & 0 & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 3 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{aligned} x_1 + x_2 + 4x_3 &= 0 \\ 0x_1 + 0x_2 + 6x_3 &= 0 \end{aligned}$$

$$\frac{x_1}{6-0} = \frac{x_2}{0-6} = \frac{x_3}{0-0} = k \quad \Rightarrow \quad \frac{x_1}{1} = \frac{x_2}{-1} = \frac{x_3}{0} = k \quad \Rightarrow \quad x_1 = k,\ x_2 = -k,\ x_3 = 0$$

Hence $X_1 = \begin{bmatrix} k \\ -k \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} = k \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$ can be taken as an eigen vector of A corresponding to the eigen value $\lambda = 2$

When $\lambda = 3$**,** substituting in (1), the corresponding eigen vector is given by

$$\begin{bmatrix} 3-3 & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & 2-3 & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 5-3 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & -1 & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 2 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{aligned} 0x_1 + x_2 + 4x_3 &= 0 \\ 0x_1 - x_2 + 6x_3 &= 0 \end{aligned}$$

$$\frac{x_1}{6+4} = \frac{x_2}{0-0} = \frac{x_3}{0-0} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \frac{x_1}{10} = \frac{x_2}{0} = \frac{x_3}{0} = \frac{k}{10}$$

$$x_1 = k,\ x_2 = 0,\ x_3 = 0$$

Hence, $X_2 = \begin{bmatrix} k \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} = k\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$ can be taken as an eigen vector of A corresponding to the eigen value $\lambda = 3$.

When $\lambda = 5$.

Again, when $\lambda = 5$, substituting in (1), the corresponding eigen vector is given by

$$\begin{bmatrix} 3-5 & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & 2-5 & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 5-5 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} -2 & 1 & 4 \\ 0 & -3 & 6 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$-2x_1 + x_2 + 4x_3 = 0$$

$$-3x_2 + 6x_3 = 0$$

By cross-multiplication method, we have

$$\frac{x_1}{6+12} = \frac{x_2}{0+12} = \frac{x_3}{6-0} \Rightarrow \frac{x_1}{18} = \frac{x_2}{12} = \frac{x_3}{6} \Rightarrow \frac{x_1}{3} = \frac{x_2}{2} = \frac{x_3}{1} = k$$

$x_1 = 3k, \quad x_2 = 2k, \quad x_3 = k$

Hence, $X_3 = \begin{bmatrix} 3k \\ 2k \\ k \end{bmatrix} = k\begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 2 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$ can be taken as an eigen vector of A corresponding to the eigen value $\lambda = 5$. **Ans.**

EXERCISE 21.3

Non-symmetric matrix with different eigen values:

Find the eigen values and the corresponding eigen vectors for the following matrices:

1. $\begin{bmatrix} 4 & 2 & -2 \\ -5 & 3 & 2 \\ -2 & 4 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $1, 2, 5; \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ 1 \\ 4 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$

2. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -2 & 3 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $-2, 1, 3; \begin{bmatrix} 11 \\ 1 \\ 14 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} -1 \\ 1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$

3. $\begin{bmatrix} -9 & 2 & 6 \\ 5 & 0 & -3 \\ -16 & 4 & 11 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $-1, 1, 2; \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ -1 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ -1 \\ 4 \end{bmatrix}$

4. $\begin{bmatrix} 4 & 6 & 6 \\ 1 & 3 & 2 \\ -1 & -4 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $-1, 1, 4; \begin{bmatrix} -6 \\ -2 \\ 7 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 1 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}$

21.9 NON-SYMMETRIC MATRIX WITH REPEATED EIGEN VALUES

Example 25. *Find the eigen values and eigen vectors of the matrix:*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*R.G.P.V. Bhopal, June 2004*)

Solution. We have, $A = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$.

Characteristic equation of A is $|A-\lambda I|=0$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad \begin{vmatrix} 2-\lambda & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2-\lambda & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1-\lambda \end{vmatrix}=0$$

On expanding the determinant by the third row, we get

$$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)\{(2-\lambda)(2-\lambda)-1\}=0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)\{(2-\lambda)^2-1\}=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)(2-\lambda+1)(2-\lambda-1)=0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)(3-\lambda)(1-\lambda)=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda=1,1,3$$

when $\lambda = 1$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2-1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2-1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1-1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} R_2 \to R_2-R_1 \quad \Rightarrow \quad x+y+z=0$$

Let $x = k_1$ and $y = k_2$

$$k_1+k_2+z=0 \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad z=-(k_1+k_2)$$

$$X_1=\begin{bmatrix} k_1 \\ k_2 \\ -(k_1+k_2) \end{bmatrix}=k\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ -2 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \text{[If } k_1=k_2=k\text{]}$$

Again $\lambda=1$, $X_2=\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}$ [Again if $k_1 = 1$, $k_2 = 0$, $-(k_1+k_2)=-1$]

when $\lambda = 3$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2-3 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 2-3 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1-3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & -1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} -1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 2 \\ 0 & 0 & -2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad R_2 \to R_2+R_1$$

$$-x+y+z=0$$

$$2z=0 \Rightarrow z=0$$

$$-x+y+0=0 \Rightarrow x=y=k \text{ (say)}$$

$$X_3=\begin{bmatrix} k \\ k \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}=k\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

Example 26. *Find all the Eigen values and Eigen vectors of the matrix*

$$A=\begin{bmatrix} -2 & 2 & -3 \\ 2 & 1 & -6 \\ -1 & -2 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$ (*AMIETE, Dec. 2009*)

Solution. Characteristic equation of A is

$$\begin{vmatrix} -2-\lambda & 2 & -3 \\ 2 & 1-\lambda & -6 \\ -1 & -2 & 0-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$\Rightarrow \quad (-2-\lambda)[-\lambda+\lambda^2-12]-2(-2\lambda-6)-3(-4+1-\lambda)=0$

$\lambda^3+\lambda^2-21\lambda-45=0 \qquad \text{.... (1)}$

By trial: If $\lambda=-3$, then $-27+9+63-45=0$, so $(\lambda+3)$ is one factor of (1).

The remaining factors are obtained on dividing (1) by $\lambda+3$.

$$\begin{array}{r|rrrr} -3 & 1 & 1 & -21 & -45 \\ & & -3 & 6 & 45 \\ \hline & 1 & -2 & -15 & 0 \end{array}$$

$\lambda^2-2\lambda-15=0 \qquad \Rightarrow (\lambda-5)(\lambda+3)=0$

$\Rightarrow \quad (\lambda+3)(\lambda+3)(\lambda-5)=0 \;\Rightarrow\; \lambda=5,-3,-3$

To find the eigen vectors for corresponding eigen values, we will consider the matrix equation

$$(A-\lambda I)X=0 \qquad i.e., \quad \begin{bmatrix} -2-\lambda & 2 & -3 \\ 2 & 1-\lambda & -6 \\ -1 & -2 & 0-\lambda \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \text{... (2)}$$

On putting $\lambda=5$ in eq. (2), it becomes $\begin{bmatrix} -7 & 2 & -3 \\ 2 & -4 & -6 \\ -1 & -2 & -5 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$

We have $\quad -7x+2y-3z=0,$

$\qquad 2x-4y-6z=0$

$$\frac{x}{-12-12}=\frac{y}{-6-42}=\frac{z}{28-4} \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{x}{-24}=\frac{y}{-48}=\frac{z}{24} \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{x}{1}=\frac{y}{2}=\frac{z}{-1}=k$$

$x=k, \quad y=2k, \quad z=-k$

Hence, the eigen vector $X_1=\begin{bmatrix} k \\ 2k \\ -k \end{bmatrix}=k\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}$

Put $\lambda=-3$ in eq. (2), it becomes $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & -3 \\ 2 & 4 & -6 \\ -1 & -2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$

We have $\quad x+2y-3z=0,$

$\qquad 2x+4y-6z=0,$

$\qquad -x-2y+3z=0$

Here first, second and third equations are the same.

Let $x=k_1$, $y=k_2$ then $z=\frac{1}{3}(k_1+2k_2)$

Hence, the eigen vector is $\begin{bmatrix} k_1 \\ k_2 \\ \frac{1}{3}(k_1+2k_2) \end{bmatrix}$

Let $k_1=0, k_2=3,$ Hence $X_2=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 3 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix}$

Since the matrix is non-symmetric, the corresponding eigen vectors X_2 and X_3 must be linearly independent. This can be done by choosing

$$k_1 = 3,\ k_2 = 0, \text{ and Hence } X_3 = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 0 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\text{Hence, } X_1 = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}, \quad X_2 = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 3 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix}, \quad X_3 = \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 0 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}.$$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 21.4

Non-symmetric matrices with repeated eigen values

Find the eigen values and eigen vectors of the following matrices:

1. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -2 & 2 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $-2, 2, 2;$ $\begin{bmatrix} -4 \\ -1 \\ 7 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$

2. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 2 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $1, 1, 5;$ $\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ -5 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$

3. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & 1 \\ 2 & 3 & 2 \\ 3 & 3 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $1, 1, 7;$ $\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix}$

4. $\begin{bmatrix} -9 & 4 & 4 \\ -8 & 3 & 4 \\ -16 & 8 & 7 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $-1, -1, 3;$ $\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix}$

5. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ (*AMIETE, Dec. 2010*) **Ans.** $1, 1, 1,$ $\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$

21.10 SYMMETRIC MATRICES WITH NON REPEATED EIGEN VALUES

Example 27. *Find the eigen values and the corresponding eigen vectors of the matrix*

$$\begin{bmatrix} -2 & 5 & 4 \\ 5 & 7 & 5 \\ 4 & 5 & -2 \end{bmatrix}$$

Solution. $|A - \lambda I| = 0$

$$\begin{vmatrix} -2-\lambda & 5 & 4 \\ 5 & 7-\lambda & 5 \\ 4 & 5 & -2-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \lambda^3 - 3\lambda^2 - 90\lambda - 216 = 0$$

By trial: Take $\lambda = -3$, then $-27 - 27 + 270 - 216 = 0$

By synthetic division

$$\begin{array}{r|rrrr} -3 & 1 & -3 & -90 & -216 \\ & & -3 & 18 & 216 \\ \hline & 1 & -6 & -72 & 0 \end{array}$$

$$\lambda^2 - 6\lambda - 72 = 0 \ \Rightarrow\ (\lambda - 12)(\lambda + 6) = 0 \ \Rightarrow\ \lambda = -3, -6,\ 12$$

Matrix equation for eigen vectors $[A - \lambda I]\, X = 0$

$$\begin{bmatrix} -2-\lambda & 5 & 4 \\ 5 & 7-\lambda & 5 \\ 4 & 5 & -2-\lambda \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \ldots(1)$$

Eigen Vector

On putting $\lambda = -3$ in (1), it will become

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 5 & 4 \\ 5 & 10 & 5 \\ 4 & 5 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{cases} x + 5y + 4z = 0 \\ 5x + 10y + 5z = 0 \end{cases}$$

$$\frac{x}{25-40} = \frac{y}{20-5} = \frac{z}{10-25} \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{x}{1} = \frac{y}{-1} = \frac{z}{1}$$

Eigen vector $X_1 = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$.

Eigen vector corresponding to eigen value $\lambda = -6$.

Equation (1) becomes

$$\begin{bmatrix} 4 & 5 & 4 \\ 5 & 13 & 5 \\ 4 & 5 & 4 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{or} \quad \begin{cases} 4x + 5y + 4z = 0 \\ 5x + 13y + 5z = 0 \end{cases}$$

$$\frac{x}{25-52} = \frac{y}{20-20} = \frac{z}{52-25} \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{x}{-1} = \frac{y}{0} = \frac{z}{1}$$

eigen vector $X_2 = \begin{bmatrix} -1 \\ 0 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$

Eigen vector corresponding to eigen value $\lambda = 12$.

Equation (1) becomes

$$\begin{bmatrix} -14 & 5 & 4 \\ 5 & -5 & 5 \\ 4 & 5 & -14 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x \\ y \\ z \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{or} \quad \begin{cases} -14x + 5y + 4z = 0 \\ 5x - 5y + 5z = 0 \end{cases}$$

$$\frac{x}{25+20} = \frac{y}{20+70} = \frac{z}{70-25} \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{x}{1} = \frac{y}{2} = \frac{z}{1}$$

Eigen vector $X_3 = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.**

Example 28. *Find the eigen values, eigen vectors the modal matrix given below.*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 3 & -1 \\ 0 & -1 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

(*R.G.P.V. Bhopal, I Sem., 2003*)

Solution. The characteristic equation of the given matrix is

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1-\lambda & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 3-\lambda & -1 \\ 0 & -1 & 3-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)\{(3-\lambda)^2 - 1\} = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)(3-\lambda+1)(3-\lambda-1) = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (1-\lambda)(4-\lambda)(2-\lambda) = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \lambda = 1, 2, 4$$

Eigen vectors

When $\lambda = 1$,

$$\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 2 & -1 \\ 0 & -1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \sim \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 2 & -1 \\ 0 & 0 & \frac{3}{2} \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad R_3 \to R_3 + \frac{1}{2}R_2$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad 2x_2 - x_3 = 0 \qquad \text{... (1)}$$

$$\frac{3}{2}x_3 = 0 \Rightarrow x_3 = 0 \qquad \text{... (2)}$$

Putting $x_3 = 0$ from (2) in (1), we get $2x_2 - 0 = 0 \Rightarrow x_2 = 0$

$$\text{Eigen Vector} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

When $\lambda = 2$,

$$\begin{bmatrix} -1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 \\ 0 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_1 \to -R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 + R_2 \end{matrix}$$

$x_1 = 0$

$x_2 - x_3 = 0 \Rightarrow x_2 = x_3$

$$\text{Eigen vector} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

When $\lambda = 4$,

$$\begin{bmatrix} -3 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 & -1 \\ 0 & -1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$-3x_1 = 0$$

$$-x_2 - x_3 = 0$$

$$x_2 = -x_3$$

$$\text{Eigen Vector} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\text{Modal matrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 21.5

Symmetric matrices with non-repeated eigen values

Find the eigen values and eigen vectors of the following matrices:

1. $\begin{bmatrix} 5 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & -2 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $-2, 4, 6; \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$

2. $\begin{bmatrix} 3 & -1 & 1 \\ -1 & 5 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $2, 3, 6; \begin{bmatrix} -1 \\ 0 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -2 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$

3. $\begin{bmatrix} 8 & -6 & 2 \\ -6 & 7 & -4 \\ 2 & -4 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ (*U.P., I Semester, Jan 2011*) **Ans.** $0, 3, 15; \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ 1 \\ -2 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ -2 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$

4. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 4 & -6 \\ 4 & 2 & -6 \\ -6 & -6 & -15 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $-2, 9, -18; \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ 2 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 4 \end{bmatrix}$

5. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 1 & 5 & 1 \\ 3 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $-2, 3, 6; \begin{bmatrix} -1 \\ 0 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$

(*AMIETE, June 2009*)

21.11 SYMMETRIC MATRICES WITH REPEATED EIGEN VALUES

Example 29. *Find all the eigen values and eigen vectors of the matrix*

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -1 & 1 \\ -1 & 2 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$$

Solution. The characteristic equation is $\begin{vmatrix} 2-\lambda & -1 & 1 \\ -1 & 2-\lambda & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & 2-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (2-\lambda)[(2-\lambda)^2 - 1] + 1[-2+\lambda+1] + 1[1-2+\lambda] = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (2-\lambda)(4-4\lambda+\lambda^2-1) + (\lambda-1) + \lambda - 1 = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad 8 - 8\lambda + 2\lambda^2 - 2 - 4\lambda + 4\lambda^2 - \lambda^3 + \lambda + 2\lambda - 2 = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad -\lambda^3 + 6\lambda^2 - 9\lambda + 4 = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda^3 - 6\lambda^2 + 9\lambda - 4 = 0 \qquad \ldots (1)$$

On putting $\lambda = 1$ in (1), the equation (1) is satisfied. So $\lambda - 1$ is one factor of the equation (1). The other factor $(\lambda^2 - 5\lambda + 4)$ is got on dividing (1) by $\lambda - 1$.

$$\Rightarrow \quad (\lambda-1)(\lambda^2 - 5\lambda + 4) = 0 \text{ or } (\lambda-1)(\lambda-1)(\lambda-4) = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \lambda = 1, 1, 4$$

The eigen values are 1, 1, 4.

When $\lambda = 4$ $\begin{pmatrix} 2-4 & -1 & 1 \\ -1 & 2-4 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & 2-4 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{pmatrix} -2 & -1 & 1 \\ -1 & -2 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & -2 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{pmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$

$$-2x_1 - x_2 + x_3 = 0$$

$$x_1 - x_2 - 2x_3 = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{x_1}{2+1} = \frac{x_2}{1-4} = \frac{x_3}{2+1} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \frac{x_1}{1} = \frac{x_2}{-1} = \frac{x_3}{1} = k$$

$$x_1 = k, \quad x_2 = -k, \quad x_3 = k$$

$$X_1 = \begin{bmatrix} k \\ -k \\ k \end{bmatrix} = k \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{or} \quad X_1 = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

When $\lambda = 1$ $\quad \begin{pmatrix} 2-1 & -1 & 1 \\ -1 & 2-1 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & 2-1 \end{pmatrix}\begin{pmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{pmatrix} = 0$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{pmatrix} 1 & -1 & 1 \\ -1 & 1 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & 1 \end{pmatrix}\begin{pmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{pmatrix} = 0 \Rightarrow \begin{pmatrix} 1 & -1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{pmatrix}\begin{pmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{pmatrix} = 0, \; \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_2 + R_1 \\ R_3 \to R_3 - R_1 \end{matrix}$$

$x_1 - x_2 + x_3 = 0$

Let $x_1 = k_1$ and $x_2 = k_2$

$k_1 - k_2 + x_3 = 0$ or $x_3 = k_2 - k_1$

$$X_2 = \begin{bmatrix} k_1 \\ k_2 \\ k_2 - k_1 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow X_2 = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \qquad \begin{bmatrix} k_1 = 1 \\ k_2 = 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Let $X_3 = \begin{bmatrix} l \\ m \\ n \end{bmatrix}$

As X_3 is orthogonal to X_1 since the given matrix is symmetric

$$[1, -1, 1]\begin{bmatrix} l \\ m \\ n \end{bmatrix} = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad l - m + n = 0 \qquad \ldots (2)$$

As X_3 is orthogonal to X_2 since the given matrix is symmetric

$$[1, 1, 0]\begin{bmatrix} l \\ m \\ n \end{bmatrix} = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad l + m + 0 = 0 \qquad \ldots (3)$$

Solving (2) and (3), we get $\dfrac{l}{0-1} = \dfrac{m}{1-0} = \dfrac{n}{1+1} \Rightarrow \dfrac{l}{-1} = \dfrac{m}{1} = \dfrac{n}{2}$

$$X_3 = \begin{bmatrix} -1 \\ 1 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 21.6

Symmetric matrices with repeated eigen values

Find the eigen values and the corresponding eigen vectors of the following matrices:

1. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 2 & 4 & 6 \\ 3 & 6 & 9 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $0, 0, 14; \begin{bmatrix} -2 \\ 1 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 6 \\ -5 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 3 \end{bmatrix}$

2. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 & 1 \\ 0 & 3 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $1, 3, 3; \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -2 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$

3. $\begin{bmatrix} 6 & -2 & 2 \\ -2 & 3 & -1 \\ 2 & -1 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $8, 2, 2; \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ -1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \\ -2 \end{bmatrix}, \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$

4. $\begin{bmatrix} 6 & -3 & 3 \\ -3 & 6 & -3 \\ 3 & -3 & 6 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** 3, 3, 12

21.12 MATRIX HAVING ONLY ONE LINEARLY INDEPENDENT EIGEN VECTOR

Example 30. *Find the eigen values and eigen vectors of*

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} -3 & -7 & -5 \\ 2 & 4 & 3 \\ 1 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$$

has less than three linearly independent eigen vectors. It is possible to obtain a similarity transformation that will diagonalise this matrix.

Solution. The characteristic equation of the given matrix is

$$|A - \lambda I| = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{vmatrix} -3-\lambda & -7 & -5 \\ 2 & 4-\lambda & 3 \\ 1 & 2 & 2-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (-3-\lambda)[(4-\lambda)(2-\lambda)-6]+7[2(2-\lambda)-3]-5[4-(4-\lambda)] = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda^3 - 3\lambda^2 + 3\lambda - 1 = 0 \;\Rightarrow\; (\lambda-1)^3 = 1 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \lambda = 1,\ 1,\ 1$$

Eigen values of the given matrix A are 1, 1, 1. Eigen vector when $\lambda = 1$

$$\begin{bmatrix} -3-1 & -7 & -5 \\ 2 & 4-1 & 3 \\ 1 & 2 & 2-1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} -4 & -7 & -5 \\ 2 & 3 & 3 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad -4x_1 - 7x_2 - 5x_3 = 0 \qquad \ldots (1)$$

$$2x_1 + 3x_2 + 3x_3 = 0 \qquad \ldots (2)$$

$$\frac{x_1}{-21+15} = \frac{x_2}{-10+12} = \frac{x_3}{-12+14}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{x_1}{-6} = \frac{x_2}{2} = \frac{x_3}{2} = k \quad \text{(say)}$$

Thus, $x_1 = -6k$, $x_2 = 2k$ and $x_3 = 2k$

$$X = \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -6k \\ 2k \\ 2k \end{bmatrix} = 2k\begin{bmatrix} -3 \\ 1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

All the eigen vectors are same and hence linearly independent. **Ans.**

21.13 MATRIX HAVING ONLY TWO EIGEN VECTORS

Example 31. *Find the eigen values and eigen vectors of* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 10 & 5 \\ -2 & -3 & -4 \\ 3 & 5 & 7 \end{bmatrix}$

has less than three linearly independent eigen vectors. Is it possible to obtain a similarity transformation that will diagonalise this matrix?

Solution. The characteristic equation of the given matrix A is

$$|A - \lambda I| = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{vmatrix} 3-\lambda & 10 & 5 \\ -2 & -3-\lambda & -4 \\ 3 & 5 & 7-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (3-\lambda)[(-3-\lambda)(7-\lambda)+20]-10[-2(7-\lambda)+12]+5[-10-3(-3-\lambda)] = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (3-\lambda)[-21+3\lambda-7\lambda+\lambda^2+20]-10[-14+2\lambda+12]+5[-10+9+3\lambda] = 0$$

$\Rightarrow \quad (3-\lambda)(\lambda^2-4\lambda-1)-10(2\lambda-2)+5(3\lambda-1)=0$

$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda^3-7\lambda^2+16\lambda-12=0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad (\lambda-3)(\lambda-2)(\lambda-2)=0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \lambda=3, 2, 2$

Eigen values of the given matrix A are 3, 2, 2.

Eigen vector, when $\lambda = 3$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 3-3 & 10 & 5 \\ -2 & -3-3 & -4 \\ 3 & 5 & 7-3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 10 & 5 \\ -2 & -6 & -4 \\ 3 & 5 & 4 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$-2x_1-6x_2-4x_3=0 \qquad \text{... (1)}$$

$$3x_1+5x_2+4x_3=0 \qquad \text{... (2)}$$

Solving (1) and (2) by cross multiplication method, we have

$$\frac{x_1}{-24+20}=\frac{x_2}{-12+8}=\frac{x_3}{-10+18}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{x_1}{-4}=\frac{x_2}{-4}=\frac{x_3}{8}=k \text{ (say)}$$

Thus, $x_1 = -4k$, $x_2 = -4k$ and $x_3 = 8k$

$$X=\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} -4k \\ -4k \\ 8k \end{bmatrix}=4k\begin{bmatrix} -1 \\ -1 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix}$$

Eigen vector when $\lambda = 2$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 3-2 & 10 & 5 \\ -2 & -3-2 & -4 \\ 3 & 5 & 7-2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 10 & 5 \\ -2 & -5 & -4 \\ 3 & 5 & 5 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad x_1+10x_2+5x_3=0 \qquad \text{... (3)}$$

$$-2x_1-5x_2-4x_3=0 \qquad \text{... (4)}$$

Solving (3) and (4) by cross multiplication method, we have

$$\frac{x_1}{-40+25}=\frac{x_2}{-10+4}=\frac{x_3}{-5+20} \Rightarrow \frac{x_1}{-15}=\frac{x_2}{-6}=\frac{x_3}{15}=k \text{ (say)}$$

$\Rightarrow \quad x_1 = -15k, \quad x_2 = -6k, \; x_3 = 15k$

$$X=\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix} -15k \\ -6k \\ 15k \end{bmatrix}=3k\begin{bmatrix} -5 \\ -2 \\ 5 \end{bmatrix}$$

We get one eigen vector corresponding to repeated root $\lambda_2 = 2 = \lambda_3$.

Eigen vectors corresponding to $\lambda_2 = 2 = \lambda_3$ are not linearly independent. Similarity transformation is not possible. **Ans.**

21.14 COMPLEX EIGEN VALUES

Example 32. *Show that if $0 < \theta < \pi$, then* $A=\begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta & -\sin\theta \\ \sin\theta & \cos\theta \end{bmatrix}$ *has no real eigen values and consequently no eigen vector.* (*Gujarat, II Semester, June 2009*)

Solution. The characteristic equation of A is $\begin{vmatrix} \cos\theta-\lambda & -\sin\theta \\ \sin\theta & \cos\theta-\lambda \end{vmatrix}=0$

$\Rightarrow \quad (\cos\theta - \lambda)^2 + \sin^2\theta = 0$

$\Rightarrow \quad \cos^2\theta - 2\lambda\cos\theta + \lambda^2 + \sin^2\theta = 0$

$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda^2 - 2\lambda\cos\theta + 1 = 0$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda = \frac{2\cos\theta \pm \sqrt{4\cos^2\theta - 4}}{2} = \frac{2\cos\theta \pm 2i\sqrt{1-\cos^2\theta}}{2} = \cos\theta \pm i\sin\theta$$

Hence, the given matrix A has no real eigen values and consequently no eigen vector. **Proved.**

Example 33. *If a matrix A is non-singular. Then $\lambda = 0$ is not its eigen value.*

Solution. Since matrix A is non-singular then $|A| \neq 0$

$$\Rightarrow \quad |A - 0I| \neq 0$$

Hence $\lambda = 0$ is not its eigen value. **Proved.**

21.15 ALGEBRAIC MULTIPLICITY

Algebraic multiplicity of an eigen value is the number of times of repetition of an eigen value.

It is denoted by $\text{mult}_a(\lambda)$.

For example, the eigen values of a matrix $\begin{bmatrix} -2 & 2 & -3 \\ 2 & 1 & -6 \\ -1 & -2 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ are $-3, -3, 5$.

The $\text{mult}_a(-3) = 2$ and $\text{mult}_a(5) = 1$

21.16 GEOMETRIC MULTIPLICITY

Geometric multiplicity of an eigen value is the number of linearly independent eigen vectors corresponding to λ.

It is denoted by $\text{Mult}_g(\lambda)$

In example 30, two linearly independent eigen vectors corresponding to

$$\lambda = -3 \text{ are } \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 3 \\ 2 \end{bmatrix} \text{ and } \begin{bmatrix} 3 \\ 0 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}.$$

so the $\text{mult}_g(-3) = 2$

And the eigen vector corresponding to $\lambda = 5$ is $\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 2 \\ -1 \end{bmatrix}$ so the $\text{mult}_g(5) = 1$.

21.17 REGULAR EIGEN VALUE

If the algebraic multiplicity and geometric multiplicity of an eigen value are equal, then the eigen value is called *regular*.

Example 34. *Find the algebraic multiplicity and geometric multiplicity of an eigen value of the matrix* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 10 & 5 \\ -2 & -3 & -4 \\ 3 & 5 & 7 \end{bmatrix}$ *and show geometric multiplicity cannot be greater than algebraic multiplicity.*

Solution. The characteristic equation of the given matrix is

$$\begin{vmatrix} 3-\lambda & 10 & 5 \\ -2 & -3-\lambda & -4 \\ 3 & 5 & 7-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad \lambda^3 - 7\lambda^2 + 16\lambda - 12 = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad (\lambda - 2)(\lambda - 2)(\lambda - 3) = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad \lambda = 2, 2, 3$$

Therefore 2 is a multiple eigen value repeating 2 times. So Algebraic Multiplicity of 2 is 2.

$$\text{Mult}_a (2) = 2. \qquad \text{...(A)}$$

We shall find the eigen vector corresponding to the eigen value 2.

$$X = \begin{bmatrix} 3-2 & 10 & 5 \\ -2 & -3-2 & -4 \\ 3 & 5 & 7-2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 10 & 5 \\ -2 & -5 & -4 \\ 3 & 5 & 5 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$x_1 + 10x_2 + 5x_3 = 0 \qquad \text{...(1)}$$

$$-2x_1 - 5x_2 - 4x_3 = 0 \qquad \text{...(2)}$$

Solving (1) and (2) by cross multiplication method, we have

$$\frac{x_1}{-40+25} = \frac{x_2}{-10+4} = \frac{x_3}{-5+20}$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad \frac{x_1}{-15} = \frac{x_2}{-6} = \frac{x_3}{15} = k \text{ (say)}$$

Thus $x_1 = -15\,k$, $\quad x_2 = -6\,k$, $\quad x_3 = -15\,k$.

$$X = \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -15k \\ -6k \\ 15k \end{bmatrix} = 3k\begin{bmatrix} -5 \\ -2 \\ 5 \end{bmatrix}$$

Here the linearly independent eigen vector is 1.

So the, geometric multiplicity of eigen value 2 is 1

$$\text{Mult}_g (2) = 1 \qquad \text{...(B)}$$

Hence from (A) and (B) **Ans.**

Geometric multiplicity < Algebraic multiplicity

Notes: (1) If the values of x_1, x_2, x_3 are in terms of k (one independent value), then there is only one linearly independent eigen vector. So the geometric multiplicity is 1.

(2) If the values of x_1, x_2, x_3 are in terms of k_1, k_2 (two independent values, then there are two linearly independent eigen vectors. So the geometric multiplicity is 2.

EXERCISE 21.7

From the following matrices; find eigen value, Algebraic multiplicity, Geometric multiplicity.

1. $\begin{bmatrix} -2 & -1 \\ 5 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\lambda = -1$, $\text{Mult}_a(-1) = 1$, $\text{Mult}_g(-1) = 1$
$\lambda = 3$, $\text{Mult}_a(3) = 1$, $\text{Mult}_g(3) = 1$

2. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\lambda = 1$, $\text{Mult}_a(1) = 3$, $\text{Mult}_g(1) = 1$

3. $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 & -3 \\ 0 & 1 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\lambda = 1$, $\text{Mult}_a(1) = 3$, $\text{Mult}_g(1) = 1$

4. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 2 & 3 \\ 0 & 0 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\lambda = 2$, $\text{Mult}_a(2) = 2$, $\text{Mult}_g(2) = 1$

5. $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 2 & 1 \\ 1 & 3 & 1 \\ 1 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\lambda = 5$, $\text{Mult}_a(5) = 1$, $\text{Mult}_g(5) = 1$

6. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2 & 2 \\ 0 & 2 & 1 \\ -1 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ Ans. $\lambda = 1$, $\text{Mult}_a(1) = 1$, $\text{Mult}_g(1) = 1$
$\lambda = 2$, $\text{Mult}_a(2) = 2$, $\text{Mult}_g(2) = 1$

7. $\begin{bmatrix} 5 & 4 & -4 \\ 4 & 5 & -4 \\ -1 & -1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\lambda = 1$, $\text{Mult}_a(1) = 2$, $\text{Mult}_g(1) = 2$
$\lambda = 10$, $\text{Mult}_a(10) = 1$, $\text{Mult}_g(10) = 1$

8. $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** $\lambda = 1$, $\text{Mult}_a(1) = 4$, $\text{Mult}_g(1) = 3$

21.18 SIMILARITY TRANSFORMATION

Let A and B be two square matrices of order n. Then B is said to be similar to A if there exists a non-singular matrix P such that

$$B = P^{-1} AP \qquad ...(1)$$

Equation (1) is called a similar transformation.

21.19 DIAGONALISATION OF A MATRIX

Diagonalisation of a matrix A is the process of reduction of A to a diagonal form 'D'. If A is related to D by a similarity transformation such that $D = P^{-1} AP$ then A is reduced to the diagonal matrix D through *modal matrix P*. D is also called *spectral matrix* of A.

21.20 ORTHOGONAL TRANSFORMATION OF A SYMMETRIC MATRIX TO DIAGONAL FORM

Let A be a symmetric matrix, then

$$A \,.\, A' = \text{I} \qquad ...(1)$$

and $$A \,.\, A^{-1} = I \qquad ...(2)$$

From (1) and (2), we have $A^{-1} = A'$

We know that, diagonalisation transformation of a symmetric matrix is

$$P^{-1}AP = D$$

If we normalize each eigen vector and use them to form the normalized modal matirx N then N is an orthogonal matrix.

Then, $$N' AN = D$$

Transforming A into D by means of the transformation $N' AN = D$ is called as orthogonal transformation.

Note. To normalize eigen vector divide each element of the vector by the square root of the sum of the squares of all the elements of the vector.

21.21 THEOREM ON DIAGONALIZATION OF A MATRIX

Theorem. *If a square matrix A of order n has n linearly independent eigen vectors, then a matrix P can be found such that P^{-1} AP is a diagonal matrix.*

Proof. We shall prove the theorem for a matrix of order 3. The proof can be easily extended to matrices of higher order.

Let $$A = \begin{bmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{bmatrix}$$

and let $\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \lambda_3$ be its eigen values and X_1, X_2, X_3 the corresponding eigen vectors, where

$$X_1 = \begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ y_1 \\ z_1 \end{bmatrix}, \qquad X_2 = \begin{bmatrix} x_2 \\ y_2 \\ z_2 \end{bmatrix}, \qquad X_3 = \begin{bmatrix} x_3 \\ y_3 \\ z_3 \end{bmatrix}$$

For the eigen value λ_1, the eigen vector is given by

$$\left.\begin{aligned} (a_1 - \lambda_1)x_1 + b_1 y_1 + c_1 z_1 &= 0 \\ a_2 x_1 + (b_2 - \lambda_1)y_1 + c_2 z_1 &= 0 \\ a_3 x_1 + b_3 y_1 + (c_3 - \lambda_1)z_1 &= 0 \end{aligned}\right\} \qquad ...(1)$$

$\therefore$ We have

$$\left.\begin{aligned} a_1 x_1 + b_1 y_1 + c_1 z_1 &= \lambda_1 x_1 \\ a_2 x_1 + b_2 y_1 + c_2 z_1 &= \lambda_1 y_1 \\ a_3 x_1 + b_3 y_1 + c_3 z_1 &= \lambda_1 z_1 \end{aligned}\right\} \qquad ...(2)$$

Similarly, for λ_2 and λ_3, we have

$$\left.\begin{aligned} a_1 x_2 + b_1 y_2 + c_1 z_2 &= \lambda_2 x_2 \\ a_2 x_2 + b_2 y_2 + c_2 z_2 &= \lambda_2 y_2 \\ a_3 x_2 + b_3 y_2 + c_3 z_2 &= \lambda_2 z_2 \end{aligned}\right\} \qquad ...(3)$$

and

$$\left.\begin{aligned} a_1 x_3 + b_1 y_3 + c_1 z_3 &= \lambda_3 x_3 \\ a_2 x_3 + b_2 y_3 + c_2 z_3 &= \lambda_3 y_3 \\ a_3 x_3 + b_3 y_3 + c_3 z_3 &= \lambda_3 z_3 \end{aligned}\right\} \qquad ...(4)$$

We consider the matrix $$P = \begin{bmatrix} x_1 & x_2 & x_3 \\ y_1 & y_2 & y_3 \\ z_1 & z_2 & z_3 \end{bmatrix}$$

whose columns are the eigen vectors of A.

Then $$AP = \begin{bmatrix} a_1 & b_1 & c_1 \\ a_2 & b_2 & c_2 \\ a_3 & b_3 & c_3 \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} x_1 & x_2 & x_3 \\ y_1 & y_2 & y_3 \\ z_1 & z_2 & z_3 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{pmatrix} a_1 x_1 + b_1 y_1 + c_1 z_1 & a_1 x_2 + b_1 y_2 + c_1 z_2 & a_1 x_3 + b_1 y_3 + c_1 z_3 \\ a_2 x_1 + b_2 y_1 + c_2 z_1 & a_2 x_2 + b_2 y_2 + c_2 z_2 & a_2 x_3 + b_2 y_3 + c_2 z_3 \\ a_3 x_1 + b_3 y_1 + c_3 z_1 & a_3 x_2 + b_3 y_2 + c_3 z_2 & a_3 x_3 + b_3 y_3 + c_3 z_3 \end{pmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{pmatrix} \lambda_1 x_1 & \lambda_2 x_2 & \lambda_3 x_3 \\ \lambda_1 y_1 & \lambda_2 y_2 & \lambda_3 y_3 \\ \lambda_1 z_1 & \lambda_2 z_2 & \lambda_3 z_3 \end{pmatrix} \qquad \text{[Using results (2), (3) and (4)]}$$

$$= \begin{pmatrix} x_1 & x_2 & x_3 \\ y_1 & y_2 & y_3 \\ z_1 & z_2 & z_3 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} \lambda_1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda_2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \lambda_3 \end{pmatrix} = PD$$

where D is the Diagonal matrix $\begin{pmatrix} \lambda_1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda_2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & \lambda_3 \end{pmatrix}$.

$\therefore \quad AP = PD$

$\Rightarrow \quad P^{-1}AP = P^{-1}PD = D$

Notes 1. The square matrix P, which diagonalises A, is found by grouping the eigen vectors of A into square-matrix and the resulting diagonal matrix has the eigen values of A as its diagonal elements.

2. The transformation of a matrix A to $P^{-1}AP$ is known as a *similarity transformation*.

3. The reduction of A to a diagonal matrix is, obviously, a particular case of similarity transformation.

4. The matrix P which diagonalises A is called the *modal matrix* of A and the resulting diagonal matrix D is known as the *spectra matrix* of A.

Example 35. *Find a matrix P which diagonalizes the matrix*

$A = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & 1 \\ 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$, *verify $P^{-1}AP = D$ where D is the diagonal matrix.* (*U.P., I Semester, Dec. 2008*)

Solution. The characteristic equation of matrix A is

$$\begin{vmatrix} 4-\lambda & 1 \\ 2 & 3-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad (4-\lambda)(3-\lambda) - 2 = 0$$

$\Rightarrow \lambda^2 - 7\lambda + 12 - 2 = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \lambda^2 - 7\lambda + 10 = 0$

$\Rightarrow (\lambda - 2)(\lambda - 5) = 0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \lambda = 2, \lambda = 5$

Eigen values are 2 and 5.

(*i*) When $\lambda = 2$, eigen vectors are given by the matrix equation

$$\begin{bmatrix} 4-2 & 1 \\ 2 & 3-2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$\Rightarrow \quad 2x_1 + x_2 = 0 \Rightarrow x_2 = -2x_1$

Let $\quad x_1 = k, \ x_2 = -2k$

Hence, the eigen vector $\quad X_1 = \begin{bmatrix} k \\ -2k \end{bmatrix}$ or $\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ -2 \end{bmatrix}$

(ii) When $\lambda = 5$, eigen vectors are given by the matrix equation

$$\begin{bmatrix} 4-5 & 1 \\ 2 & 3-5 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 1 \\ 2 & -2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$\Rightarrow \quad -x_1 + x_2 = 0 \Rightarrow x_1 = x_2$

Let $x_1 = k$, then $x_2 = k$

Hence, the eigen vector $\quad X_2 = \begin{bmatrix} k \\ k \end{bmatrix}$ or $\begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$

Modal matrix $\quad P = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ -2 & 1 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow P^{-1} = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 \\ 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

For diagonalization

$$D = P^{-1}AP = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 \\ 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 4 & 1 \\ 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 \\ -2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1 \\ 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 5 \\ -4 & 5 \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 6 & 0 \\ 0 & 15 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 5 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Verified.**

Example 36. *Let* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 6 & -2 & 2 \\ -2 & 3 & -1 \\ 2 & -1 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ *Find matrix P such that* $P^{-1}AP$ *is diagonal matrix.*

Solution. The characteristic equation of the matrix A is

$$\begin{vmatrix} 6-\lambda & -2 & 2 \\ -2 & 3-\lambda & -1 \\ 2 & -1 & 3-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (6-\lambda)[9+\lambda^2-6\lambda-1]+2[-6+2\lambda+2]+2[2-6+2\lambda]=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (6-\lambda)(\lambda^2-6\lambda+8)-8+4\lambda-8+4\lambda=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad 6\lambda^2-36\lambda+48-\lambda^3+6\lambda^2-8\lambda-16+8\lambda=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad -\lambda^3+12\lambda^2-36\lambda+32=0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \lambda^3-12\lambda^2+36\lambda-32=0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad (\lambda-2)^2(\lambda-8)=0 \quad \Rightarrow \quad \lambda = 2, 2, 8$$

Eigen vector for $\lambda = 2$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 4 & -2 & 2 \\ -2 & 1 & -1 \\ 2 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \text{ or } \begin{bmatrix} 2 & -1 & 1 \\ -2 & 1 & -1 \\ 2 & -1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \begin{matrix} R_2 \to R_1 + R_2 \\ R_3 \to R_2 + R_3 \end{matrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -1 & 1 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \text{ or } 2x_1 - x_2 + x_3 = 0$$

This equation is satisfied by $x_1 = 0, x_2 = 1, x_3 = 1$

$$X_1 = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

and again $\qquad x_1 = 1, x_2 = 3, x_3 = 1.$

$$X_2 = \begin{bmatrix} 1 \\ 3 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Eigen vector for $\lambda = 8$

$$\begin{bmatrix} -2 & -2 & 2 \\ -2 & -5 & -1 \\ 2 & -1 & -5 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$-2x_1 - 2x_2 + 2x_3 = 0$$

$$-2x_1 - 5x_2 - x_3 = 0$$

$$\frac{x_1}{2+10} = \frac{x_2}{-4-2} = \frac{x_3}{10-4} \Rightarrow \frac{x_1}{12} = \frac{x_2}{-6} = \frac{x_3}{6} \Rightarrow \frac{x_1}{2} = \frac{x_2}{-1} = \frac{x_3}{1}$$

$$X_3 = \begin{bmatrix} 2 \\ -1 \\ 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\therefore \qquad P = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 3 & -1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}, \quad P^{-1} = -\frac{1}{6}\begin{bmatrix} 4 & 1 & -7 \\ -2 & -2 & 2 \\ -2 & 1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

Now $\quad P^{-1}AP = -\dfrac{1}{6}\begin{bmatrix} 4 & 1 & -7 \\ -2 & -2 & 2 \\ -2 & 1 & -1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 6 & -2 & 2 \\ -2 & 3 & -1 \\ 2 & -1 & 3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1 & 2 \\ 1 & 3 & -1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 8 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.**

Example 37. *The matrix* $A = \begin{bmatrix} a & h \\ h & b \end{bmatrix}$ *is transformed to the diagonal form* $D = T^{-1}AT$, *where* $T = \begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta & \sin\theta \\ -\sin\theta & \cos\theta \end{bmatrix}$. *Find the value of* θ *which gives this diagonal transformation.*

Solution. $T = \begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta & \sin\theta \\ -\sin\theta & \cos\theta \end{bmatrix} \quad \therefore T^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta & -\sin\theta \\ \sin\theta & \cos\theta \end{bmatrix}$

Now $T^{-1}AT = \begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta & -\sin\theta \\ \sin\theta & \cos\theta \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} a & h \\ h & b \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta & \sin\theta \\ -\sin\theta & \cos\theta \end{bmatrix}$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} a\cos\theta - h\sin\theta & h\cos\theta - b\sin\theta \\ a\sin\theta + h\cos\theta & h\sin\theta + b\cos\theta \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} \cos\theta & \sin\theta \\ -\sin\theta & \cos\theta \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} a\cos^2\theta - 2h\sin\theta\cos\theta + b\sin^2\theta & (a-b)\sin\theta\cos\theta - h\sin^2\theta + h\cos^2\theta \\ (a-b)\sin\theta\cos\theta + h\cos^2\theta - h\sin^2\theta & a\sin^2\theta + 2h\sin\theta\cos\theta + b\cos^2\theta \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} a\cos^2\theta - h\sin 2\theta + b\sin^2\theta & (a-b)\sin\theta\cos\theta + h\cos 2\theta \\ (a-b)\sin\theta\cos\theta + h\cos 2\theta & a\sin^2\theta + h\sin 2\theta + b\cos^2\theta \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} d_1 & 0 \\ 0 & d_2 \end{bmatrix} \text{ being diagonal matrix}$$

$$\therefore \qquad (a-b)\sin\theta\cos\theta + h\cos 2\theta = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad \frac{a-b}{2}\sin 2\theta + h\cos 2\theta = 0 \qquad \Rightarrow \frac{a-b}{2}\sin 2\theta = -h\cos 2\theta$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad \tan 2\theta = \frac{2h}{b-a} \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad \theta = \frac{1}{2}\tan^{-1}\frac{2h}{b-a}$$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 21.8

1. Find the matrix B which transforms the matrix

$A = \begin{bmatrix} 8 & -8 & -2 \\ 4 & -3 & -2 \\ 3 & -4 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$ to a diagonal matrix. **Ans.** $B = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & 3 & 2 \\ 3 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

2. For the matrix $A = \begin{bmatrix} 4 & 1 & 0 \\ 1 & 4 & 1 \\ 0 & 1 & 4 \end{bmatrix}$, determine a matrix P such that $P^{-1}AP$ is diagonal matrix.

Ans. $P = \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & -\sqrt{2} & \sqrt{2} \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

3. Determine the eigen values and the corresponding eigen vectors of the matrix $A = \begin{bmatrix} 5 & 7 & -5 \\ 0 & 4 & -1 \\ 2 & 8 & -3 \end{bmatrix}$

Hence find the matrix P such that $P^{-1}AP$ is diagonal matrix. **Ans.** $P = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 1 & -1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 3 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$

4. Reduce the following matrix A into a diagonal matrix

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} 8 & -6 & 2 \\ -6 & 7 & -4 \\ 2 & -4 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$

Ans. $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 3 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 15 \end{bmatrix}$

21.22 POWERS OF A MATRIX (By diagonalisation)

We can obtain powers of a matrix by using diagonalisation.

We know that $D = P^{-1} AP$

Where A is the square matrix and P is a non-singular matrix.

$$D^2 = (P^{-1} AP)(P^{-1} AP) = P^{-1} A (P P^{-1}) AP = P^{-1} A^2 P$$

Similarly $D^3 = P^{-1} A^3 P$

In general $D^n = P^{-1} A^n P$ ...(1)

Pre-multiply (1) by P and post-multiply by P^{-1}

$$\begin{aligned} P D^n P^{-1} &= P (P^{-1} A^n P) P^{-1} \\ &= (P P^{-1}) A^n (P P^{-1}) \\ &= A^n \end{aligned}$$

Procedure: (1) Find eigen values for a square matrix A.

(2) Find eigen vectors to get the modal matrix P.

(3) Find the diagonal matrix D, by the formula $D = P^{-1}$ AP

(4) Obtain A^n by the formula $A^n = P D^n P^{-1}$.

Example 38. *Find a matrix P which transform the matrix* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ *to diagonal form. Hence* A^4.

Solution. Characteristic equation of the matrix A is

$$\begin{vmatrix} 1-\lambda & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2-\lambda & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3-\lambda \end{vmatrix} = 0 \quad \text{or} \quad \lambda^3 - 6\lambda^2 + 11\lambda - 6 = 0$$

$$\text{or} \quad (\lambda - 1)(\lambda - 2)(\lambda - 3) = 0$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda = 1, 2, 3$$

For $\lambda = 1$, eigen vector is given by

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1-1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2-1 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3-1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\left.\begin{aligned} 0x_1 + 0x_2 - x_3 &= 0 \\ x_1 + x_2 + x_3 &= 0 \end{aligned}\right] \quad \Rightarrow \quad \frac{x_1}{0+1} = \frac{x_2}{-1+0} = \frac{x_3}{0} \text{ or } x_1 = 1, x_2 = -1, x_3 = 0$$

Eigen vector is [1, –1, 0].

For $\lambda = 2$, eigen vector is given by

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1-2 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2-2 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3-2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} -1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 0 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 1 & 0 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad R_1 \to R_1 + R_2$$

$$\left.\begin{aligned} x_1 + 0x_2 + x_3 &= 0 \\ 2x_1 + 2x_2 + x_3 &= 0 \end{aligned}\right]$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{x_1}{0-2} = \frac{x_2}{2-1} = \frac{x_3}{2-0} \quad \Rightarrow \quad x_1 = -2, \quad x_2 = 1, \quad x_3 = 2$$

Eigen vector is [–2, 1, 2].

For $\lambda = 3$, eigen vector is given by

$$\begin{bmatrix} 1-3 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2-3 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3-3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} -2 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 0 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} x_1 \\ x_2 \\ x_3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 \\ 0 \\ 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\left.\begin{aligned} -2x_1 + 0x_2 - x_3 &= 0 \\ x_1 - x_2 + x_3 &= 0 \end{aligned}\right]$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \frac{x_1}{0-1} = \frac{x_2}{-1+2} = \frac{x_3}{2-0} \quad \Rightarrow \quad x_1 = -1, \quad x_2 = 1, \quad x_3 = 2$$

Eigen vector is [–1, 1, 2].

Modal matrix $P = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & -1 \\ -1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ and $P^{-1} = -\frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 2 & -1 \\ 2 & 2 & 0 \\ -2 & -2 & -1 \end{bmatrix}$

Now $\quad P^{-1}AP = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & -1 & \frac{1}{2} \\ -1 & -1 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & \frac{1}{2} \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & -1 \\ 1 & 2 & 1 \\ 2 & 2 & 3 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & -1 \\ -1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 3 \end{bmatrix} = D$

$$A^4 = PD^4P^{-1} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -2 & -1 \\ -1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 2 & 2 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 16 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 81 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 0 & -1 & \frac{1}{2} \\ -1 & -1 & 0 \\ 1 & 1 & \frac{1}{2} \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} -49 & -50 & -40 \\ 65 & 66 & 40 \\ 130 & 130 & 81 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 21.9

Find a matrix P which transforms the following matrices to diagonal form. Hence calculate the power matrix.

1. If $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 3 \\ 1 & 5 & 1 \\ 3 & 1 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$, calculate A^4. **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 251 & 405 & 235 \\ 405 & 891 & 405 \\ 235 & 405 & 251 \end{bmatrix}$

2. If $A = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & -1 & 1 \\ -1 & 5 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$, calculate A^4. **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 251 & -405 & 235 \\ -405 & 891 & -405 \\ 235 & -405 & 251 \end{bmatrix}$

3. If $A=\begin{bmatrix} 2 & -1 & 1 \\ -1 & 2 & -1 \\ 1 & -1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$, calculate A^6. **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} 1366 & -1365 & 1365 \\ -1365 & 1366 & -1365 \\ 1365 & -1365 & 1366 \end{bmatrix}$

4. If $A=\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 0 & 2 & 1 \\ -4 & 4 & 3 \end{bmatrix}$, calculate A^8. **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix} -12099 & 12355 & 6305 \\ -12100 & 12356 & 6305 \\ -13120 & 13120 & 6561 \end{bmatrix}$

5. Show that the matrix A is diagonalisable $A=\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 1 & -1 \\ -2 & 1 & 2 \\ 0 & 1 & 2 \end{bmatrix}$. If so obtain the matrix P such that P^{-1} AP is a diagonal matrix. *(AMIETE, June 2010)*

21.23 SYLVESTER THEOREM

Let $P(A) = C_0 A^n + C_1 A^{n-1} + C_2 A^{n-2} + \ldots + C_{n-1} A + C_n I$

and $|\lambda I - A| = f(\lambda)$ and Adjoint matrix of $[\lambda I - A] = [f(\lambda)]$

$$z(\lambda) = \frac{[f(\lambda)]}{f'(\lambda)} = \frac{\text{Adjoint matrix of } [\lambda I - A]}{f'(\lambda)}$$

Then according to Sylvester's theorem

$$P(A) = P(\lambda_1).\, Z(\lambda_1) + P(\lambda_2).\, Z(\lambda_2) + P(\lambda_3).\, Z(\lambda_3) + \ldots$$

$$= \sum_{r=1}^{n} P(\lambda_r).\, Z(\lambda_r)$$

Example 39. *If* $A=\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$, *find* A^{100}.

Solution. $f(\lambda) = |\lambda I - A| = \begin{vmatrix} \lambda & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda \end{vmatrix} - \begin{vmatrix} 2 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{vmatrix} = \begin{vmatrix} \lambda-2 & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda-1 \end{vmatrix} = 0$

$\Rightarrow \quad f(\lambda) = (\lambda-2)(\lambda-1) = 0$ or $\lambda_1 = 1,\ \lambda_2 = 2$

$f(\lambda) = \lambda^2 - 3\lambda + 2, \quad f'(\lambda) = 2\lambda - 3$

$f'(2) = 4 - 3 = 1, f'(1) = 2 - 3 = -1$

$[f(\lambda)]$ = Adjoint matrix of the matrix $[\lambda I - A] = \begin{bmatrix} \lambda-1 & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda-2 \end{bmatrix}$

$$Z(\lambda_1) = Z(1) = \frac{[f(1)]}{f'(1)} = \frac{1}{-1}\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$Z(\lambda_2) = Z(2) = \frac{[f(2)]}{f'(2)} = \frac{1}{1}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

By Sylvester theorem $P(A) = P(\lambda_1).\, Z(\lambda_1) + P(\lambda_2).\, Z(\lambda_2)$

$$A^{100} = P(\lambda_1)\, Z(\lambda_1) + P(\lambda_2)\, Z(\lambda_2)$$

$$= \lambda_1^{100}\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} + \lambda_2^{100}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = 1^{100}\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} + 2^{100}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 2^{100} & 0 \\ 0 & 0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 2^{100} & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

Example 40. *If* $A=\begin{bmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & 3\end{bmatrix}$, *find* A^{50}.

Solution. $f(\lambda)=|\lambda I-A|=\begin{vmatrix}\lambda & 0\\ 0 & \lambda\end{vmatrix}-\begin{vmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & 3\end{vmatrix}=\begin{vmatrix}\lambda-1 & 0\\ 0 & \lambda-3\end{vmatrix}=0$

$\Rightarrow \quad f(\lambda)=(\lambda-1)(\lambda-3)=0$ or $\lambda_1=1,\ \lambda_2=3$

$f(\lambda)=\lambda^2-4\lambda+3,\quad f'(\lambda)=2\lambda-4$

$f'(1)=2-4=-2,\quad f'(3)=6-4=2$

$[f(\lambda)]$ = Adjoint matrix of the matrix $[\lambda I-A]=\begin{bmatrix}\lambda-3 & 0\\ 0 & \lambda-1\end{bmatrix}$

$$Z(\lambda_1)=Z(1)=\frac{[f(1)]}{f'(1)}=\frac{1}{-2}\begin{bmatrix}-2 & 0\\ 0 & 0\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & 0\end{bmatrix}$$

$$Z(\lambda_2)=Z(3)=\frac{[f(3)]}{f'(3)}=\frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix}0 & 0\\ 0 & 2\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}0 & 0\\ 0 & 1\end{bmatrix}$$

By Sylvester theorem $P(A)=P_1(\lambda_1).Z(\lambda_1)+P(\lambda_2).Z(\lambda_2)$

$$A^{50}=P(\lambda_1)Z(\lambda_1)+P(\lambda_2)Z(\lambda_2)=\lambda_1^{50}\begin{bmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & 0\end{bmatrix}+\lambda_2^{50}\begin{bmatrix}0 & 0\\ 0 & 1\end{bmatrix}$$

$$=1^{50}\begin{bmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & 0\end{bmatrix}+3^{50}\begin{bmatrix}0 & 0\\ 0 & 1\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & 0\end{bmatrix}+\begin{bmatrix}0 & 0\\ 0 & 3^{50}\end{bmatrix}=\begin{bmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & 3^{50}\end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 21.10

1. Verify Sylvesters theorem for A^3, where $A=\begin{bmatrix}1 & 4\\ 3 & 2\end{bmatrix}$

Use sylvesters theorem in solving the following:

2. Given $A=\begin{bmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & 3\end{bmatrix}$, find A^{256}. **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix}1 & 0\\ 0 & 3^{256}\end{bmatrix}$

3. Given $A=\begin{bmatrix}\lambda_1 & 0\\ 0 & \lambda_2\end{bmatrix}$, show that $e^A=\begin{bmatrix}e^{\lambda_1} & 0\\ 0 & e^{\lambda_2}\end{bmatrix}$.

4. Given $A=\begin{bmatrix}-1 & 3\\ 1 & 1\end{bmatrix}$, show that $2\sin A=|\sin 2|A$.

5. Prove that $3\tan A=A\tan(3)$ where $A=\begin{bmatrix}-1 & 4\\ 2 & 1\end{bmatrix}$

6. Prove that $\sin^2 A+\cos^2 A=1$, where $A=\begin{bmatrix}1 & 2\\ -1 & 4\end{bmatrix}$

7. Given $A=\begin{bmatrix}1 & -2 & -3\\ 0 & 2 & 0\\ 0 & 0 & 3\end{bmatrix}$, find A^{-1}. **Ans.** $\begin{bmatrix}1 & -1 & 1\\ 0 & -\frac{1}{2} & 0\\ 0 & 0 & \frac{1}{3}\end{bmatrix}$

8. Given $A=\begin{bmatrix}1 & 20 & 0\\ -1 & 7 & 1\\ 3 & 0 & -2\end{bmatrix}$, find $\tan A$.

Ans. $\frac{\tan 1}{2}\begin{bmatrix}-18 & 60 & 20\\ 0 & 0 & 0\\ -18 & 60 & 20\end{bmatrix}+\frac{\tan 2}{-1}\begin{bmatrix}-20 & 80 & 20\\ -1 & 4 & 1\\ -15 & 60 & 15\end{bmatrix}+\frac{\tan 3}{2}\begin{bmatrix}-20 & 100 & 20\\ -2 & 10 & 2\\ -12 & 60 & 12\end{bmatrix}$

21.24 COMPLEX MATRICES

Conjugate of a Complex Number

$z = x + i\,y$ is called a complex number where $\sqrt{-1} = i$, x, y are real numbers. $\bar{z} = x - iy$ is called the conjugate of the complex number z, e.g.,

Complex number	Conjugate number
$2 + 3i$	$2 - 3i$
$-4 - 5i$	$-4 + 5i$
$6i$	$-6i$
2	2

Conjugate of a matrix. The matrix formed by replacing the elements of a matrix by their respective conjugate numbers is called the conjugate of A and is denoted by $\bar{A}$.

$$A = (a_{ij})_{m\times n},\ \text{then}\ \bar{A} = (\bar{a}_{ij})_{m\times n}$$

Example

If $A = \begin{bmatrix} 3+4i & 2-i & 4 \\ i & 2 & -3i \end{bmatrix}$ then $\bar{A} = \begin{bmatrix} 3-4i & 2+i & 4 \\ -i & 2 & 3i \end{bmatrix}$

21.25 THEOREM

If A and B be two matrices and their conjugate matrices are $\bar{A}$ and $\bar{B}$ respectively, then

(*i*) $(\bar{\bar{A}}) = A$ (*ii*) $(\overline{A+B}) = \bar{A} + \bar{B}$ (*iii*) $(\overline{kA}) = \bar{k}\,\bar{A}$ (*iv*) $(\overline{AB}) = \bar{A}\bar{B}$

Proof. Let $A = [a_{ij}]_{m\times n}$, then

$\bar{A} = [\bar{a}_{ij}]_{m\times n}$ where $\bar{a}_{ij}$ is the conjugate complex of a_{ij}.

The (i, j) th element of $(\bar{\bar{A}})$ = the conjugate complex of the (i, j)th element of $\bar{A}$
= the conjugate complex of $\bar{a}_{ij}$
= a_{ij} = the (i, j)th element of A.

Hence $(\bar{\bar{A}}) = A$. **Proved.**

(*ii*) Let $A = [a_{ij}]_{m\times n}$ and $B = [b_{ij}]_{m\times n}$

$\bar{A} = [\bar{a}_{ij}]_{m\times n}$ and $\bar{B} = [\bar{b}_{ij}]_{m\times n}$

(i, j) th element of $(\overline{A+B})$ = conjugate complex of (i, j) th element of $(A + B)$
= conjugate complex of $(a_{ij} + b_{ij})$
$= (\overline{a_{ij} + b_{ij}}) = \bar{a}_{ij} + \bar{b}_{ij}$
= (i, j)th element of $\bar{A}$ + (i, j)th element of $\bar{B}$
= (i, j)th element of $(\bar{A} + \bar{B})$

Hence, $(\overline{A+B}) = \bar{A} + \bar{B}$ **Proved.**

(*iii*) Let $A = [a_{ij}]_{m\times n}$, let k be any complex number.

The (i, j)th element of $(\overline{kA})$ = conjugate complex of the (i, j)th element of kA
= conjugate complex of ka_{ij}
$= \overline{ka_{ij}} = \bar{k}\cdot\bar{a}_{ij}$
$= \bar{k}\cdot(i, j)$th element of $\bar{A} = (i, j)$th element of $\bar{k}.\ \bar{A}$

Hence, $\overline{kA} = \bar{k}\cdot\bar{A}$ **Proved.**

(*iv*) Let $A = [a_{ij}]_{m \times n}$, $B = [b_{ij}]_{n \times p}$

Then $\overline{A} = [\overline{a_{ij}}]_{m \times n}$, $\overline{B} = [\overline{b_{ij}}]_{n \times p}$

The (i, j)th element of $(\overline{AB})$ = conjugate complex of (i, j)th element of AB

$$= \text{conjugate complex of } \sum_{j=1}^{n} a_{ij}\, b_{jk} = \left(\sum_{j=1}^{n} \overline{a_{ij} b_{jk}}\right) = \sum_{j=1}^{n} \overline{a_{ij}} \cdot \overline{b_{jk}}$$

$= (i, j)$th element of $\overline{A} \cdot \overline{B}$

Hence, $(\overline{AB}) = \overline{A} \cdot \overline{B}$ **Proved.**

21.26 TRANSPOSE OF CONJUGATE OF A MATRIX

The transpose of a conjugate of a matrix A is denoted by A^{θ} or A^{*}.

$$(\overline{A})' = A^{\theta}$$

The (i, j)th element of A^{θ} = (j, i)th element of $\overline{A}$
= conjugate complex of (j, i)th element of A.

Example 41. *If* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 2+3i & 1-2i & 2+4i \\ 3-4i & 4+3i & 2-6i \\ 5 & 5+6i & 3 \end{bmatrix}$, *find* A^{θ}

Solution. We have, $A = \begin{bmatrix} 2+3i & 1-2i & 2+4i \\ 3-4i & 4+3i & 2-6i \\ 5 & 5+6i & 3 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \overline{A} = \begin{bmatrix} 2-3i & 1+2i & 2-4i \\ 3+4i & 4-3i & 2+6i \\ 5 & 5-6i & 3 \end{bmatrix}$

$$A^{\theta} = (\overline{A})' = \begin{bmatrix} 2-3i & 3+4i & 5 \\ 1+2i & 4-3i & 5-6i \\ 2-4i & 2+6i & 3 \end{bmatrix}$$ **Ans.**

EXERCISE 21.11

1. If the matrix $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1+i & 3-5i \\ 2i & 5 \end{bmatrix}$, find (*i*) $\overline{A}$ (*ii*) $(\overline{A})'$ (*iii*) A^{θ} (*iv*) $(A^{\theta})^{\theta}$

Ans. (*i*) $\overline{A} = \begin{bmatrix} 1-i & 3+5i \\ -2i & 5 \end{bmatrix}$ (*ii*) $(\overline{A})' = \begin{bmatrix} 1-i & -2i \\ 3+5i & 5 \end{bmatrix}$

(*iii*) $A^{\theta} = \begin{bmatrix} 1-i & -2i \\ 3+5i & 5 \end{bmatrix}$ (*iv*) $(A^{\theta})^{\theta} = \begin{bmatrix} 1+i & 3-5i \\ 2i & 5 \end{bmatrix}$

21.27 HERMITIAN MATRIX

Definition. A square matrix $A = [a_{ij}]$ is said to be Hermitian if the (i, j)th element of A, *i.e.*,

$$a_{ij} = \overline{a}_{ji} \text{ for all } i \text{ and } j.$$

For example, $\begin{bmatrix} 2 & 3+4i \\ 3-4i & 1 \end{bmatrix}$, $\begin{bmatrix} a & b-id \\ b+id & c \end{bmatrix}$

Hence all the elements of the principal diagonal are real.

A necessary and sufficient condition for a matrix A to be Hermitian is that $A = A^{\theta}$.

Example 42. *Prove that the following*

(*i*) $(A^{\theta})^{\theta} = A$ (*ii*) $(A+B)^{\theta} = A^{\theta} + B^{\theta}$ (*iii*) $(kA)^{\theta} = \overline{k}\, A^{\theta}$ (*iv*) $(AB)^{\theta} = B^{\theta} \cdot A^{\theta}$

where A^{θ} *and* B^{θ} *be the transposed conjugates of A and B respectively, A and B being conformable to multiplication.*

Solution.

(*i*) $(A^\theta)^\theta = [\overline{\{(\overline{A})'\}}]' = [\overline{\overline{A}}] = A$ as $\left\{(\overline{A})'\right\}' = \overline{A}$

(*ii*) $(A+B)^\theta = (\overline{A+B})' = (\overline{A}+\overline{B})'$

$$= (\overline{A})' + (\overline{B})' = A^\theta + B^\theta$$

(*iii*) $(kA)^\theta = (\overline{kA})' = (\overline{k}\,\overline{A})' = \overline{k}(\overline{A})' = \overline{k}\,A^\theta$

(*iv*) $(AB)^\theta = (\overline{AB})' = (\overline{A}\cdot\overline{B})' = (\overline{B})'\cdot(\overline{A})' = B^\theta \cdot A^\theta$ **Proved.**

Example 43. *Prove that matrix* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1-i & 2 \\ 1+i & 3 & i \\ 2 & -i & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ *is Hermitian.*

Solution. $\overline{A} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1+i & 2 \\ 1-i & 3 & -i \\ 2 & i & 0 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow (\overline{A})' = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1-i & 2 \\ 1+i & 3 & i \\ 2 & -i & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

$\Rightarrow$ $A^\theta = A$ $\Rightarrow$ A is Hermitian matrix. **Proved.**

Example 44. *Show that* $A = \begin{bmatrix} -i & 3+2i & -2-i \\ -3+2i & 0 & 3-4i \\ 2-i & -3-4i & -2i \end{bmatrix}$ *is Skew-Hermitian matrix.*

Solution. $\overline{A} = \begin{bmatrix} i & 3-2i & -2+i \\ -3-2i & 0 & 3+4i \\ 2+i & -3+4i & 2i \end{bmatrix}$

$$(\overline{A})' = \begin{bmatrix} i & -3-2i & 2+i \\ 3-2i & 0 & -3+4i \\ -2+i & 3+4i & 2i \end{bmatrix}$$

$\Rightarrow$ $A^\theta = \begin{bmatrix} i & -3-2i & 2+i \\ 3-2i & 0 & -3+4i \\ -2+i & 3+4i & 2i \end{bmatrix}$ $[\because\ A^\theta = (\overline{A})']$

$$= -\begin{bmatrix} -i & 3+2i & -2-i \\ -3+2i & 0 & 3-4i \\ 2-i & -3-4i & -2i \end{bmatrix} = -A$$

$A^\theta = -A \Rightarrow A$ is Skew-Hermitian matrix. **Proved.**

Example 45. *Show that the matrix* $B^\theta AB$ *is Hermitian or Skew-Hermitian according as* A *is Hermitian or Skew-Hermitian.*

Solution. (*i*) Let A be Hermitian $\Rightarrow$ $A^\theta = A$

Now $(B^\theta AB)^\theta = (AB)^\theta\,(B^\theta)^\theta$

$$= B^\theta \cdot A^\theta \cdot B$$

$$= B^\theta \cdot A \cdot B \qquad (A^\theta = A)$$

Hence, $A^\theta AB$ is Hermitian.

(*ii*) Let A be Skew-Hermitian $\Rightarrow$ $A^\theta = -A$

Now, $(B^\theta AB)^\theta = (AB)^\theta \cdot (B^\theta)^\theta$
$= B^\theta \cdot A^\theta \cdot B$
$= -B^\theta A \cdot B \qquad (A^\theta = -A)$

Hence, $B^\theta AB$ is Skew-Hermitian. **Proved.**

21.28 THE CHARACTERISTIC ROOTS OF A HERMITIAN MATRIX ARE ALL REAL

Solution.
We know that matrix A is Hermitian if

$$A^\theta = A \text{ i.e., where } A^\theta = (\bar{A}') \text{ or } (\bar{A})'$$

Also $(\lambda A)^\theta = \bar{\lambda} A^\theta$ and $(AB)^\theta = B^\theta A^\theta$.

If λ is a characteristic root of matrix A then $AX = \lambda X$. ...(1)

$\therefore$ $(AX)^\theta = (\lambda X)^\theta$ or $X^\theta A^\theta = \bar{\lambda} X^\theta$.

But A is Hermitian. $\therefore A^\theta = A$.

$\therefore$ $X^\theta A = \bar{\lambda} X^\theta \quad \therefore \; X^\theta AX = \bar{\lambda} X^\theta X$ ...(2)

Again from (1) $X^\theta AX = X^\theta \lambda X = \lambda X^\theta X$ ...(3)

Hence from (2) and (3) we conclude that $\bar{\lambda} = \lambda$ showing that λ is real.

Deduction 1. *From above we conclude that characteristic roots of real symmetric matrix are all real, as in this case, real symmetric matrix will be Hermitian.*

For symmetric, we know that $A' = A$. $(\bar{A}') = \bar{A}$

or $A^\theta = A$ $\therefore \; \bar{A} = A$ as A is real. Rest as above.

21.29 SKEW-HERMITIAN MATRIX

Definition. A square matrix $A = (a_{ij})$ is said to be Skew-Hermitian matrix if the (i, j)th element of A is equal to the negative of the conjugate complex of the (j, i)th element of A, *i.e.*, $a_{ij} = -\bar{a}_{ji}$ for all i and j.

If A is a Skew-Hermitian matrix, then

$$a_{ii} = -\bar{a}_{ii}$$
$$a_{ii} + \bar{a}_{ii} = 0$$

Obviously, a_{ii} is either a pure imaginary number or must be zero.

For example, $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & -3+4i \\ 3+4i & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ and $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & a-ib \\ -a-ib & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ are Skew-Hermitian matrixes.

A necessary and sufficient condition for a matrix A to be Skew-Hermitian is that $A^\theta = -A$.

Deduction 2. *Characteristic roots of a skew Hermitian matrix is either zero or a pure imaginary numbers.*

If A is skew Hermitian, then iA is Hermitian.

Also λ be a characteristic root of A then $AX = \lambda X$.

$\therefore$ $(i\,.A)\,X = (i\lambda)\,X$.

Above shows that $i\lambda$ is characteristic root of matrix iA, which is Hermitian and hence $i\lambda$ should be real, which will be possible if λ is either pure imaginary or zero.

Example 46. *Show that every square matrix can be expressed as $R + iS$ uniquely where R and S are Hermitian matrices.*

Solution. Let A be any square matrix. It can be rewritten as

$$A = \left\{\frac{1}{2}(A + A^\theta)\right\} + i\left\{\frac{1}{2i}(A - A^\theta)\right\} = R + iS$$

where $R = \frac{1}{2}(A + A^\theta)$, $S = \frac{1}{2i}(A - A^\theta)$

Now we have to show that R and S are Hermitian matrices.

$$R^\theta = \frac{1}{2}(A + A^\theta)^\theta = \frac{1}{2}[A^\theta + (A^\theta)^\theta] = \frac{1}{2}(A^\theta + A) = \frac{1}{2}(A + A^\theta) = R$$

Thus R is Hermitian matrix.

Now, $$S^\theta = \left[\frac{1}{2i}(A - A^\theta)\right]^\theta = -\frac{1}{2i}(A - A^\theta)^\theta$$

$$= -\frac{1}{2i}[A^\theta - (A^\theta)^\theta] = \frac{-1}{2i}(A^\theta - A) = \frac{1}{2i}(A - A^\theta) = S$$

Thus S is a Hermitian matrix.

Hence $A = R + iS$, where R and S are Hermitian matrices.

Now, we have to show its **uniqueness**.

Let $A = P + iQ$ be another expression, where P and Q are Hermitian matrices, *i.e.*,

$$P^\theta = P,\ Q^\theta = Q$$

Then $$A^\theta = (P + iQ)^\theta = P^\theta + (iQ)^\theta = P^\theta - iQ^\theta = P - iQ$$

$$A = P + iQ \text{ and } A^\theta = P - iQ$$

$\Rightarrow$ $$P = \frac{1}{2}(A + A^\theta) = R \text{ and } Q = \frac{1}{2i}(A - A^\theta) = S$$

Hence $A = R + iS$ is the unique expression, where R and S are Hermitian matrices. **Proved.**

Example 47. *Express the matrix* $A = \begin{bmatrix} i & 2-3i & 4+5i \\ 6+i & 0 & 4-5i \\ -i & 2-i & 2+i \end{bmatrix}$ *as a sum of Hermitian and Skew Hermitian matrix.* *(U.P.I Sem Dec, 2009)*

Solution. Here, we have

$$A = \begin{bmatrix} i & 2-3i & 4+5i \\ 6+i & 0 & 4-5i \\ -i & 2-i & 2+i \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{... (1)}$$

$$\bar{A} = \begin{bmatrix} -i & 2+3i & 4-5i \\ 6-i & 0 & 4+5i \\ i & 2+i & 2-i \end{bmatrix}$$

$$(\bar{A})' = \begin{bmatrix} -i & 6-i & i \\ 2+3i & 0 & 2+i \\ 4-5i & 4+5i & 2-i \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^\theta = \begin{bmatrix} -i & 6-i & i \\ 2+3i & 0 & 2+i \\ 4-5i & 4+5i & 2-i \end{bmatrix} \quad \text{... (2)}$$

On adding (1) & (2), we get

$$A + A^\theta = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 8-4i & 4+6i \\ 8+4i & 0 & 6-4i \\ 4-6i & 6+4i & 4 \end{bmatrix}$$

Let $$R = \frac{1}{2}\left[A + A^{\theta}\right] = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 4-2i & 2+3i \\ 4+2i & 0 & 3-2i \\ 2-3i & 3+2i & 2 \end{bmatrix} \quad \ldots (3)$$

On subtracting (2) from (1), we get

$$A - A^{\theta} = \begin{bmatrix} 2i & -4-2i & 4+4i \\ 4-2i & 0 & 2-6i \\ -4+4i & -2-6i & 2i \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\frac{1}{2}\left(A - A^{\theta}\right) = \begin{bmatrix} i & -2-i & 2+2i \\ 2-i & 0 & 1-3i \\ -2+2i & -1-3i & i \end{bmatrix} \quad \ldots (4)$$

From (3) and (4), we have

$$A = \underbrace{\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 4-2i & 2+3i \\ 4+2i & 0 & 3-2i \\ 2-3i & 3+2i & 2 \end{bmatrix}}_{\text{Hermitian matrix}} + \underbrace{\begin{bmatrix} i & -2-i & 2+2i \\ 2-i & 0 & 1-3i \\ -2+2i & -1-3i & i \end{bmatrix}}_{\text{Skew-Hermitian matrix}}$$

Example 48. *Express the matrix* $A = \begin{bmatrix} 1+i & 2 & 5-5i \\ 2i & 2+i & 4+2i \\ -1+i & -4 & 7 \end{bmatrix}$ *as the sum of Hermitian matrix and Skew-Hermitian matrix.*

Solution. $$A = \begin{bmatrix} 1+i & 2 & 5-5i \\ 2i & 2+i & 4+2i \\ -1+i & -4 & 7 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow \overline{A} = \begin{bmatrix} 1-i & 2 & 5+5i \\ -2i & 2-i & 4-2i \\ -1-i & -4 & 7 \end{bmatrix} \quad \ldots(1)$$

$$(\overline{A})' = \begin{bmatrix} 1-i & -2i & -1-i \\ 2 & 2-i & -4 \\ 5+5i & 4-2i & 7 \end{bmatrix} \Rightarrow A^{\theta} = \begin{bmatrix} 1-i & -2i & -1-i \\ 2 & 2-i & -4 \\ 5+5i & 4-2i & 7 \end{bmatrix} \quad \ldots(2)$$

On adding (1) and (2), we get

$$A + A^{\theta} = \begin{bmatrix} 2 & 2-2i & 4-6i \\ 2+2i & 4 & 2i \\ 4+6i & -2i & 14 \end{bmatrix}$$

Let $$R = \frac{1}{2}(A + A^{\theta}) = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1-i & 2-3i \\ 1+i & 2 & i \\ 2+3i & -i & 7 \end{bmatrix} \quad \ldots(3)$$

On subtracting (2) from (1), we get

$$A - A^{\theta} = \begin{bmatrix} 2i & 2+2i & 6-4i \\ -2+2i & 2i & 8+2i \\ -6-4i & -8+2i & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

Let $$S = \frac{1}{2}(A - A^{\theta}) = \begin{bmatrix} i & 1+i & 3-2i \\ -1+i & i & 4+i \\ -3-2i & -4+i & 0 \end{bmatrix} \quad \ldots(4)$$

From (3) and (4), we have

$$A = \underbrace{\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1-i & 2-3i \\ 1+i & 2 & i \\ 2+3i & -i & 7 \end{bmatrix}}_{\text{Hermitian matrix}} + \underbrace{\begin{bmatrix} i & 1+i & 3-2i \\ -1+i & i & 4+i \\ -3-2i & -4+i & 0 \end{bmatrix}}_{\text{Skew-Hermitian matrix}}$$ **Ans.**

Example 49. *For any square matrix, if* $AA^{\theta} = I$ *show that* $A^{\theta}A = I$.

Solution. $AA^{\theta} = I$ (given)

So A is invertible.

Let B be another matrix such that

$$AB = BA = I \quad ...(1)$$

Now $B = BI = B(AA^{\theta})$ $(AA^{\theta} = I)$

$= (BA)A^{\theta}$

$= IA^{\theta} = \mathbf{A}^{\theta}$ [Using (1)]

We know that $BA = I$ [From (1)]

Putting the value of B from (2) in (1), we get

$\Rightarrow$ $A^{\theta}A = I$ **Proved.**

21.30 CHARACTERISTIC ROOTS OF A SKEW-HERMITIAN MATRIX IS EITHER ZERO OR PURELY AN IMAGINARY NUMBER

[*U.P. (C.O.) 2003*]

Since A is a skew-Hermitian matrix:

$\therefore$ iA is Hermitian matrix.

Let λ be a characteristic root of A.

Then, $AX = \lambda X \Rightarrow (iA)X = (i\lambda)X$

$\Rightarrow$ $i\lambda$ is a characteristic root of matrix iA.

But $i\lambda$ is a characteristic root of Hermitian matrix.

Therefore, $i\lambda$ should be real.

Hence, λ is either zero or purely imaginary. **Proved.**

21.31 PERIODIC MATRIX

A square matrix is said to be periodic, if $A^{k+1} = A$, where k is a positive integer. If k is the least positive integer for which $A^{k+1} = A$, then A is said to be of period k.

21.32 IDEMPOTENT MATRIX

A square matrix is said to be idempotent provided $A^2 = A$.

21.33 PROVE THAT THE EIGEN VALUES OF AN IDEMPOTENT MATRIX ARE EITHER ZERO OR UNITY

(*R.G.P.V., Bhopal, I Semester, June* 2007)

Solution. Let A be an idempotent matrix.

$\therefore$ $A^2 = A$

Let λ be a characteristic root of A and the corresponding vector be X. Hence $X \neq 0$ and

$$AX = \lambda X \quad ...(1)$$

$\Rightarrow$ $A(AX) = A(\lambda X) = \lambda(AX)$

$\Rightarrow$ $(AA)X = \lambda(\lambda X)$ [$\because$ From (1), $AX = \lambda X$]

$\Rightarrow$ $A^2X = \lambda^2 X$

$\Rightarrow$ $AX = \lambda^2 X$ [$\because$ $A^2 = A$]

$\Rightarrow$ $\lambda X = \lambda^2 X$ [From (1), $AX = \lambda X$]

$\Rightarrow \quad (\lambda^2 - \lambda) X = 0 \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad \lambda^2 - \lambda = 0$

$\Rightarrow \quad \lambda(\lambda - 1) = 0 \qquad \Rightarrow \qquad \lambda = 0,\ 1 \qquad [\because X \neq 0]$

Hence, the eigen values of an idempotent matrix are either zero or unity. **Proved.**

Example 50. *Determine all the idempotent diagonal matrices of order n.*

Solution. Let A = diag. $[d_1, d_2, d_3, \ldots d_n]$ be an idempotent matrix of order n.

Here, for the matrix 'A' to be idempotent $A^2 = A$

$$\begin{bmatrix} d_1 & 0 & 0........0 \\ 0 & d_2 & 0........0 \\ 0 & 0 & d_3.......0 \\ \hline 0 & 0 & 0........d_n \end{bmatrix} \begin{bmatrix} d_1 & 0 & 0........0 \\ 0 & d_2 & 0........0 \\ 0 & 0 & d_3.......0 \\ \hline 0 & 0 & 0........d_n \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} d_1 & 0 & 0........0 \\ 0 & d_2 & 0........0 \\ 0 & 0 & d_3.......0 \\ \hline 0 & 0 & 0........d_n \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad \begin{bmatrix} d_1^2 & 0 & 0........0 \\ 0 & d_2^2 & 0........0 \\ 0 & 0 & d_3^2.......0 \\ \hline 0 & 0 & 0........d_n^2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} d_1 & 0 & 0........0 \\ 0 & d_2 & 0........0 \\ 0 & 0 & d_3.......0 \\ \hline 0 & 0 & 0........d_n \end{bmatrix}$$

$\therefore \qquad d_1^2 = d_1;\ \ d_2^2 = d_2.........d_n^2 = d_n$

i.e., $\qquad d_1 = 0, 1;\ d_2 = 0, 1;\ d_3 = 0, 1\ ....\ d_n = 0, 1.$

Hence diag. $[d_1, d_2, d_3 \ldots d_n]$, is the required idempotent matrix where

$d_1 = d_2 = d_3 = \ldots d_n = 0$ or 1. **Ans.**

EXERCISE 21.12

1. Which of the following matrices are Hermitian:

(*a*) $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 2+i & 3-i \\ 2+i & 2 & 4-i \\ 3+i & 4+i & 3 \end{bmatrix}$ (*b*) $\begin{bmatrix} 2i & 3 & 1 \\ 4 & -1 & 6 \\ 3 & 7 & 2i \end{bmatrix}$

(*c*) $\begin{bmatrix} 4 & 2-i & 5+2i \\ 2+i & 1 & 2-5i \\ 5-2i & 2+5i & 2 \end{bmatrix}$ (*d*) $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & i & 3 \\ -7 & 0 & 5i \\ 3i & 1 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** (*c*)

2. Which of the following matrices are Skew-Hermitian:

(*a*) $\begin{bmatrix} 2i & -3 & 4 \\ 3 & 3i & -5 \\ -4 & 5 & 4i \end{bmatrix}$ (*b*) $\begin{bmatrix} 3i & -1 & 2 \\ 1 & 2i & -6 \\ 4 & 6 & -3i \end{bmatrix}$

(*c*) $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1-i & 2+3i \\ -1-i & 0 & 6i \\ -2+3i & 6i & 4i \end{bmatrix}$ (*d*) $\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 3 & 7+i \\ 3i & -i & 6 \\ 7-i & 8 & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ **Ans.** (*a*), (*c*)

3. Give an example of a matrix which is Skew-symmetric but not Skew-Hermitian.

Ans. $\begin{bmatrix} 0 & 2+3i \\ -2-3i & 0 \end{bmatrix}$

4. If A be a Hermitian matrix, show that iA is Skew-Hermitian. Also show that if B be a Skew-Hermitian matrix, then iB must be Hermitian.

5. If A and B are Hermitian matrices, then show that $AB + BA$ is Hermitian and $AB - BA$ is Skew-Hermitian.

6. If A is any square matrix, show that $A + A^\theta$ is Hermitian.

7. If $H = \begin{bmatrix} 3 & 5+2i & -3 \\ 5-2i & 7 & 4i \\ -3 & -4i & 5 \end{bmatrix}$, show that H is a Hermitian matrix.

Verify that iH is a Skew-Hermitian matrix.

8. Show that for any complex square matrix A,

(*i*) $(A + A^*)$ is a Hermitian matrix, where $A^* = \overline{A}^T$

(*ii*) $(A - A^*)$ is Skew-Hermitian matrix.

(*iii*) AA^* and A^*A are Hermitian matrices.

9. Show that any complex square matrix can be uniquely expressed as the sum of a Hermitian matrix and a Skew-Hermitian matrix.

10. Express $A = \begin{bmatrix} i & 2-3i & 4+5i \\ 6+i & 0 & 4-5i \\ -i & 2-i & 2+i \end{bmatrix}$ as the sum of Hermitian and Skew-Hermitian matrices.

11. Prove that the latent roots of a Hermitian matrix are all real.

12. If A = $\begin{bmatrix} 2+i & 3 & -1+3i \\ -5 & i & 4-2i \end{bmatrix}$ show that AA^* is a Hermitian matrix; where A^* is the conjugate transpose of A. (*AMIETE, June 2010*)

21.34 UNITARY MATRIX

A square matrix A is said to be unitary matrix if

$$A \cdot A^\theta = A^\theta A = I$$

Example 51. *If A is a unitary matrix, show that A^T is also unitary.*

Solution. $A \cdot A^\theta = A^\theta A = I$, since A is a unitary matrix.

$$(AA^\theta)^\theta = (A^\theta A)^\theta = I^\theta \qquad (I^\theta = I)$$

$$(AA^\theta)^\theta = (A^\theta A)^\theta = I$$

$$(A^\theta)^\theta A^\theta = A^\theta (A^\theta)^\theta = I$$

$$AA^\theta = A^\theta A = I \qquad [\text{since } (A^\theta)^\theta = A]$$

$$(AA^\theta)^T = (A^\theta A)^T = (I)^T$$

$$(A^\theta)^T A^T = A^T (A^\theta)^T = I$$

$$(A^T)^\theta \cdot A^T = A^T (A^T)^\theta = I$$

Hence, A^T is a unitary matrix. **Proved.**

Example 52. *If A is a unitary matrix, show that A^{-1} is also unitary.*

Solution. $AA^\theta = A^\theta A = I$, since A is a unitary matrix.

$$(AA^\theta)^{-1} = (A^\theta \cdot A)^{-1} = (I)^{-1} \qquad \text{taking inverse}$$

$$(A^\theta)^{-1} \cdot A^{-1} = A^{-1}(A^\theta)^{-1} = I$$

$$(A^{-1})^\theta \cdot A^{-1} = A^{-1}(A^{-1})^\theta = I$$

Hence, A^{-1} is a unitary matrix. **Proved.**

Example 53. *If A and B are two unitary matrices, show that AB is a unitary matrix.*

Solution. $A \cdot A^\theta = A^\theta A = I$ since A is a unitary matrix. ...(1)

Similarly, $B \cdot B^{\theta} = B^{\theta} B = I$ ...(2)

Now,
$$(AB)(AB)^{\theta} = (AB)(B^{\theta} \cdot A^{\theta})$$
$$= A(BB^{\theta}) \cdot A^{\theta}$$
$$= A\, I\, A^{\theta} \qquad \text{[From (2)]}$$
$$= AA^{\theta} = I \qquad \text{[From (1)]}$$

Again,
$$(AB)^{\theta} \cdot (AB) = (B^{\theta} \cdot A^{\theta})\,(AB)$$
$$= B^{\theta}(A^{\theta} A)\, B \qquad \text{[From (1)]}$$
$$= B^{\theta}\, I\, B$$
$$= B^{\theta} B$$
$$= I \qquad \text{[From (2)]}$$

Hence, AB is a unitary matrix. **Proved.**

Example 54. *Prove that the matrix* $\frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1+i \\ 1-i & -1 \end{bmatrix}$ *is unitary.*

Solution. Let $A = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1+i \\ 1-i & -1 \end{bmatrix}$

$$A^{\theta} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1+i \\ 1-i & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$A^{\theta} \cdot A = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1+i \\ 1-i & -1 \end{bmatrix} \times \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1+i \\ 1-i & -1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 1+(1+1) & (1+i)-(1+i) \\ (1-i)-1(1-i) & (1+1)+1 \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{3}\begin{bmatrix} 3 & 0 \\ 0 & 3 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} = I$$

Hence, A is a unitary matrix. **Proved.**

Example 55. *Show that the matrix* $A = \begin{bmatrix} \alpha + i\gamma & -\beta + i\delta \\ \beta + i\delta & \alpha - i\gamma \end{bmatrix}$ *is a unitary matrix if*

$$\alpha^2 + \beta^2 + \gamma^2 + \delta^2 = 1$$ (*U.P., I Semester, Dec.* 2005)

Solution. We have,
$$A = \begin{bmatrix} \alpha + i\gamma & -\beta + i\delta \\ \beta + i\delta & \alpha - i\gamma \end{bmatrix}$$
$$A^{\theta} = \begin{bmatrix} \alpha - i\gamma & \beta - i\delta \\ -\beta - i\delta & \alpha + i\gamma \end{bmatrix}$$

We know that, a square matrix A is said to be unitary if $A\ A^{\theta} = I$

$$\begin{bmatrix} \alpha + i\gamma & -\beta + i\delta \\ \beta + i\delta & \alpha - i\gamma \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} \alpha - i\gamma & \beta - i\delta \\ -\beta - i\delta & \alpha + i\gamma \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\begin{bmatrix} \alpha^2 + \gamma^2 + \beta^2 + \delta^2 & \alpha\beta - i\alpha\delta + i\beta\gamma + \gamma\delta - \alpha\beta - i\beta\gamma + i\alpha\delta - \delta\gamma \\ \alpha\beta - i\beta\gamma + i\alpha\delta + \gamma\delta - \alpha\beta - i\alpha\delta + i\beta\gamma - \delta\gamma & \beta^2 + \delta^2 + \alpha^2 + \gamma^2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \begin{bmatrix} \alpha^2 + \beta^2 + \gamma^2 + \delta^2 & 0 \\ 0 & \alpha^2 + \beta^2 + \gamma^2 + \delta^2 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad \alpha^2 + \beta^2 + \gamma^2 + \delta^2 = 1$$ **Proved.**

Example 56. *Define a unitary matrix. If* $N = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1+2i \\ -1+2i & 0 \end{bmatrix}$ *is a matrix, then show that* $(I - N)\,(I + N)^{-1}$ *is a unitary matrix, where I is an identity matrix.*

(*U.P.*, *I Semester*, *Winter* 2000)

Solution. Unitary matrix: A square matrix 'A' is said to be unitary if $A^\theta A = I$, where $A^\theta = (\overline{A})^T$ and I is an identity matrix.

we have $$N = \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1+2i \\ -1+2i & 0 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$I - N = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} - \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1+2i \\ -1+2i & 0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1+2i \\ 1-2i & 1 \end{bmatrix} \qquad ...(1)$$

Now we have to find $(I + N)^{-1}$

$$I + N = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{bmatrix} + \begin{bmatrix} 0 & 1+2i \\ -1+2i & 0 \end{bmatrix} = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1+2i \\ -1+2i & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$|I + N| = 1 - (-1 - 4) = 6$$

$$\text{Adj. } (I+N) = \begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1-2i \\ 1-2i & 1 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$(I+N)^{-1} = \frac{Adj(I+N)}{|I+N|} = \frac{1}{6}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1-2i \\ 1-2i & 1 \end{bmatrix} \qquad ...(2)$$

For unitary matrix, $A^\theta A = I$

From (1) and (2), we get

$$\therefore \quad (I-N)\,(I+N)^{-1} = \frac{1}{6}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1-2i \\ 1-2i & 1 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & -1-2i \\ 1-2i & 1 \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{6}\begin{bmatrix} -4 & -2-4i \\ 2-4i & -4 \end{bmatrix} = B \text{ (say)}$$

Now $$(\overline{B})^T = \frac{1}{6}\begin{bmatrix} -4 & 2+4i \\ -2+4i & -4 \end{bmatrix}$$

$$\therefore \quad (\overline{B})^T B = \frac{1}{36}\begin{bmatrix} -4 & 2+4i \\ -2+4i & -4 \end{bmatrix}\begin{bmatrix} -4 & -2-4i \\ 2-4i & -4 \end{bmatrix} = \frac{1}{36}\begin{bmatrix} 36 & 0 \\ 0 & 36 \end{bmatrix} = I.$$

Hence the result. **Proved.**

21.35. THE MODULUS OF EACH CHARACTERISTIC ROOT OF A UNITARY MATRIX IS UNITY.

(*U.P.*, *I Semester*, *Compartment* 2002)

Solution. Suppose A is a unitary matrix. Then

$$A^\theta A = I.$$

Let λ be a characteristic root of A. Then

$$AX = \lambda X \qquad ...(1)$$

Taking conjugate transpose of both sides of (1), we get

$$(AX)^\theta = \overline{\lambda} X^\theta \qquad ...(2)$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad X^\theta A^\theta = \overline{\lambda} X^\theta$$

From (1) and (2), we have

$$(X^\theta A^\theta)\,(AX) = \overline{\lambda}\lambda\, X^\theta X$$

$$\Rightarrow \quad X^\theta (A^\theta A)\, X = \overline{\lambda}\lambda\, X^\theta X$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad X^\theta IX = \bar{\lambda}\lambda X^\theta X \qquad (\because A^\theta . A = I)$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad X^\theta X = \bar{\lambda}\lambda X^\theta X$$

$$\Rightarrow \qquad X^\theta X(\bar{\lambda}\lambda - 1) = 0 \qquad ...(3)$$

Since, $X^\theta \; X \neq 0$ therefore (3) gives

$$\lambda\bar{\lambda} - 1 = 0. \text{ or } \lambda\bar{\lambda} = 1 \quad \text{or} \quad |\lambda|^2 = 1 \quad \Rightarrow \quad |\lambda| = 1$$ **Proved.**

EXERCISE 21.13

1. Show that the matrix $A = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & i \\ -i & -1 \end{bmatrix}$ is unitary.

2. Prove that a real matrix is unitary if it is orthogonal.

3. Prove that the following matrix is unitary:

$$\begin{bmatrix} \frac{1}{2}(1+i) & \frac{1}{2}(-1+i) \\ \frac{1}{2}(1+i) & \frac{1}{2}(1-i) \end{bmatrix}$$

4. Show that $U = \frac{1}{\sqrt{3}}\begin{bmatrix} 1 & 1 & 1 \\ 1 & \omega & \omega^2 \\ 1 & \omega^2 & \omega \end{bmatrix}$ is a unitary matrix, where ω is the complex cube root of unity.

5. Prove that the latent roots of a unitary matrix have unit modulus.

6. Verify that the matrix

$$A = \frac{1}{2}\begin{bmatrix} 1+i & 1-i \\ 1-i & 1+i \end{bmatrix}$$

has eigen values with unit modulus.

Tick (✓) the correct answer:

7. If λ is an eigen value of the matrix 'M' then for the matrix $(M - \lambda I)$, which of the following statement (*s*) is/are coorrect ?
(*i*) Skew symmetric (*ii*) Non singular (*iii*) Singular (*iv*) None of these **Ans.** (*iii*)
(*U.P., I Sem. Dec. 2009*)

8. A square matrix A is idempotent if :
(*i*) $A' = A$ (*ii*) $A' = -A$ (*iii*) $A^2 = A$ (*iv*) $A^2 = I$ **Ans.** (*iii*)
(*R.G.P.V. Bhopal, I Semester June,* 2007)

9. If a square matrix U such that $\overline{U}' = U^{-1}$ then U is
(*i*) Orthogonal (*ii*) Unitary (*iii*) Symmetric (*iv*) Hermitian **Ans.** (*ii*)
(*R.G.P.V. Bhopal, I Semester June,* 2007)

10. If λ is an eigen value of a non-singular matrix A then the eigen value of A^{-1} is
(*i*) $1/\lambda$ (*ii*) λ (*iii*) $-\lambda$ (*iv*) $-1/\lambda$
(*AMIETE, June 2010*) **Ans.** (*i*)